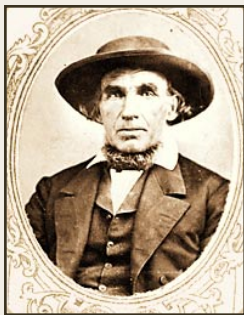


THE JOURNAL OF



JOSEPH LEE  
ROBINSON

MORMON PIONEER

THE JOURNAL OF  
*Joseph Lee Robinson*  
MORMON PIONEER



Captured by Dr. Oliver Preston Robinson  
and Mary Robinson Egan



Published journal scanned  
by David and Joni Nielsen



Formatted as an ebook  
by Kevin Merrell



# CONTENTS



► *Click on a topic to go there. ► To return to this page, click on Contents in the Bookmark list to the left*

1	<b>Cover</b>	183	June 1856
3	<b>Contents</b>	193	January 1st, 1857
4	<b>Introduction</b>	<b>194</b>	<b>The Utah War</b>
9	<b>Family Background</b>	198	January 1858
11	<b>Early Adult Years</b>	212	May 1859
12	October 1835	<b>215</b>	<b>Mature Years</b>
13	August 1836	217	May 1860
25	Winter 1839	222	January 1861
26	June 1838	226	October 1862
26	April 1839	227	March 1863
27	October 1840	232	January 1864
32	Spring 1841	234	September 1865
<b>33</b>	<b>Nauvoo, Illinois</b>	246	February 1867
38	Fall 1841	255	February 1868
49	1844	258	February 1869
51	August 1842	259	October 1871
53	September 1843	260	September 1872
59	June 1845	268	1874
70	January 1846	268	October 1875
<b>76</b>	<b>Crossing the Plains</b>	269	February 1876
90	March 1847	<b>273</b>	<b>Last Years</b>
107	July 1848	273	January 1877
<b>110</b>	<b>Salt Lake Valley</b>	353	February 1888
112	February 1849	367	January 1889
<b>124</b>	<b>Mission: South Utah</b>	390	January 1890
124	Spring 1850	405	January 1891
137	Spring 1851	423	January 1892
148	April 1853	<b>461</b>	<b>Second Section</b>
<b>161</b>	<b>Return to Farmington</b>	461	April 1884
168	March 1854	467	February 1885
174	January 1855	475	January 1886

## NOTE FROM KEVIN MERRELL

I have designed this ebook form of Joseph Lee Robinson's journal. In this effort I stand on the shoulders of giants, starting with Dr. Oliver Preston Robinson. Oliver read Father Robinson's actual journal pages into a tape recorder, then had the recordings transcribed and published. Oliver in effect translated the journal, giving the published version the benefits of spelling, punctuation and paragraphs that make it easier for us to read today.

Decades later, descendants David & Joni Nielsen scanned the published journal and shared it on their [website](#), bringing the journal to a whole new audience.

In the process of producing an interactive CD-ROM biography about one of Joseph Lee's granddaughters, Pearl Bennett, I found David's website and made his acquaintance. Along the way I felt prompted to offer to format the journal file as an interactive ebook. A larger, more interactive ebook of the journal is also under development. I've enjoyed collaborating with David on this project honoring his great, great, great, great grandfather.

While I am not a descendant of Joseph Lee Robinson, his life has touched my life; I would invite you to let his life as reflected in his journal, touch *your* life. I am honored to be a part of the collective effort to tell his story. AUGUST 2003

## NOTE FROM DAVID S. NIELSEN

I have electronically scanned the pages of the journal and am distributing them to my family and anyone else interested in Robinson family history. I am a descendant of Joseph Lee Robinson through his oldest son, Oliver Lee Robinson. My Robinson genealogy is as follows: Joseph Lee Robinson > Oliver Lee Robinson > Harry Stratford Robinson > Geraldine Robinson Nielsen > Richard James Nielsen.

I truly feel it is a miracle that I found this journal and have been able to publish it. The journal was loaned to me by Joyce Anderson Steed, another descendent of Joseph Lee Robinson. In the summer of 2001, I began to work on my genealogy, concentrating on the journals and histories of my ancestors. I had already found a copy of Oliver Lee Robinson's journal which my wife and I have transcribed (located on <http://www.planetnielsen.com>).

That summer, I was browsing through the names of people who had submitted Joseph Lee Robinson's and Oliver Lee Robinson's genealogy on familysearch.org. Out of the 50+ names listed, I noticed that one of the submitters was from Pleasanton, CA – a town of about 50,000 people in Northern California and my current residence. I felt impressed a number

of times to call her, and after several months I finally did call.

We talked about how we were related and she mentioned that she might have some books on the Robinson family. We arranged a meeting and she agreed, reluctantly, to loan me her precious copy of Joseph Lee Robinson's journal. As of this writing (January, 2002) she is leaving Pleasanton for Utah. If I hadn't called when I did, none of us would have had the chance to read this incredible journal.

#### NOTE FROM OLIVER PRESTON ROBINSON

This is a complete and as accurate a copy as possible of the main journal of Joseph Lee Robinson, entitled "History of Joseph Lee Robinson". The journal is beautifully handwritten and reasonably legible. J.L.R. arranged it in sections according to dates selected by himself. The pages, about 7 1/2 by 12 inches in size, are colored with age with edges a bit frayed, due to considerable handling by members of the family and some words are missing on page bottoms.

By assignment by the officers of the Joseph Lee Robinson Family Organization, this copy has been dictated by Joseph Lee's great grandson, Dr. Oliver Preston Robinson. Cousin Preston was selected because he has had considerable experience as an editor and writer. For many years he was

general manager of the Deseret News Publishing Company and editor of the Deseret News. While serving as president of the British Mission in London, was editor of the Millennial Star.

This dictation was commenced on the 10th of March, 1978 and continued over a period extending to October, 1980 The typing was completed over this same period by Mary Robinson Egan, a great, great granddaughter. As each original page was completed and the dictation carefully checked, the original journal page was inserted in a plastic cover and the entire journal, fully preserved, has been deposited for safekeeping in the Historical Department of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints. It is anticipated that sufficient copies of the dictated journal will be made available to members of the family who are interested in having a copy.

Joseph Lee Robinson hand bound his journal using the cardboard top of a box which had contained Martha Washington Genuine Turkey Red H'dk'fs. He also used the bottom of this box and then bound the whole journal together with a plaid cloth for the back, or spine, of the book. This cover is interesting and has been preserved with the original pages of the journal. Those wishing to examine it may do so at the Historical Dept.

So all members of the family may see a sample of J.L.R.'s handwriting, a slightly reduced copy of page 22 of his journal which contains his impressive testimony of the Prophet Joseph

Smith, page 23 in this dictated copy, has been included in the front of this journal. Also from the bottom of page 10, to the top of page 112 in this dictated copy, four pages in J.L.R.'s journal written on both sides of the sheets, his record has been dictated exactly as he wrote it with his spelling and punctuation.

For some reason, J.L.R. wrote a second journal, shorter and duplicative of his main one. This second journal has been read carefully and any information in it not contained in his original one, has been included in the dictated material.

It has been a privilege to have accomplished this work of dictation so that members of this great family may have access to the interesting and inspirational story of the life, activities and fine selfless service of our great ancestor.





·1811-1816·

## **Family Background**

Birth to five years old

I, Joseph Lee Robinson, was born of goodly parentage in the town of Shaftsbury, Benington Co., St. of Vermont, February 18, 1811. My father's name is Nathan, his father's name was Joseph, his mother's name was Rosanna.

My mother's name was Mary, her father's name was Samuel Brown, his mother's name was Mary who was the wife of Joseph Lee, after him I was named.

I feel very much interested in him according to the workings of the spirit in me. I should say that the blood of the Prophets courses largely in his veins. That he was a noble son of Joseph who was the son of Jacob and of Isaac who was the son of Abraham, the father of the faithful. He is through the loins of Ephraim so that when he has an opportunity he will immediately receive the gospel even the new and everlasting covenant for we shall do for him in holy temples what he would have done for himself were he here in this our day so that he may obtain the holy priesthood and be sealed with his holy

wives for time and eternity and exaltation in the kingdom of God.

Now with regard to my grandfather Samuel Brown, I say but little at present. He was a pious and good man. A son of Abraham through the loins of Joseph that was sold into Egypt. He also shall receive the holy gospel, for we his noble sons and daughters shall take great pleasure in performing all the ordinances in the House of God for our father and son of the faithful and our noble mothers, the daughters of Abraham and Sarah. Now my fathers, the Robinsons, were morally honest and my own father was very religiously inclined, not so much of the blood of Israel as upon my mother side, but they shall be saved in the kingdom that is if they will believe.

My father sold his farm in Shaftsbury, Vermont state, and moved his family into the state of New York the winter that I was five years old.

·1832-1841·

## **Early Adult Years**

Marriage

Joining The Church of Jesus Christ  
of Latter-day Saints

But as I find in some of my writings, I have written somewhat of my history from my birth until marriage so I will place these writings at the commencement of this work and let it suffice for the present. Therefore I will proceed to things of later years, in them we mention the birth of our firstborn son, we named him Oliver Lee. He was a very spritely little fellow, of him we are very proud and the Lord smiled upon us very much and blessed our labors. We were very much devoted to the cause of our dear Redeemer. That is, we served the Lord the best we knew when we set up housekeeping we commenced our worship by reading a portion of the scriptures and developed a family capacity to kneel before the Lord and offer up our prayers of thankfulness and gratitude. We offered both family and secret prayers and also were very punctual in attending our meetings and always took an active part in speaking and bearing testimony and all in which we took great delight and

we strove diligently to have our lives and conduct correspond with our profession.

*October 1835*

The Lord gave us the second son, we called his name Ebenezer. He was a fine promising child, he was born October 19, 1835.

About these days my mind was wonderfully wrought upon the Lord, the spirit constrained me, I prayed much and earnestly unto the Lord for the people that God would pour out of his spirit and cause a revival, or a reformation among the people, and I received a testimony in the spirit, that the Lord would grant my request and that I should see the day when the people should bow to the mild scepter of King Emmanuel.

I also prayed earnestly that I might see my Savior, that he would manifest himself to me, as I greatly desired to see him in person. At this time I knew nothing of the work of God on the earth, that he had revealed the holy gospel to man, that the angel had flown through the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach to man on the earth, as John the Revelator prophesied should be away in the future of his day. I did not understand that the holy gospel had been taken from the earth, that there was no man on the earth

that held the priesthood of God, or that had authority from God to administer the holy gospel. That is, to baptize for the remission of sins and to confirm the same, members in the church of Christ, by the laying on of hands and give to them the Holy Ghost, and also to heal the sick.

*August 1836*

I knew nothing of this until my brother Ebenezer came to me in the month of August 1836. He brought to me the holy gospel. He was an elder of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints and he opened up the holy scriptures to me as I had never seen them before. I saw the light of truth, I received it readily in a few days and believed every word he said. I received it with great joy and he, my brother, baptized me and confirmed me a member of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints and in the name of Jesus Christ he gave to me the Holy Ghost, for he had said to me as Peter said, to repent and be baptized and ye shall receive the Holy Ghost that he shall know the doctrine that it is of God. I believed his testimony and took him at his word and in a few days I received the Holy Ghost and spake in tongues and prophesied all which proved to me that he was called of God as was Aaron that he had authority to preach the gospel and to give the Holy Ghost. I received from him the Book of Mormon

and a copy of the Book of Covenants. I read them much and thanks to my Heavenly Father that I lived in this day in the which God had spoken from the heavens and has committed the dispensation of the fullness of times. That our God was about to gather his people Israel from their long dispersions and built up his kingdom in the earth and bring forth his Zion preparatory to the millennial reign of Christ on earth which is to last for 1,000 years according to the predictions of the holy prophets.

We received a periodical published by the Latter-day Saints in Kirtland, Ohio but soon the Saints were driven from that place and they had settled in the state of Missouri. But soon their enemies were upon them and the fall after the winter of [????] they, the entire Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, were driven from the state of Missouri.

We had adopted the rule of attending to our family prayers precisely at six o'clock in the evening and about this time while the Saints were in this deepest trouble one Sunday evening after reading a portion of the scriptures as usual, we knelt down to attend to family prayers after addressing the throne of grace saying a few words, we commenced to pray for the Saints in Zion. A heavenly vision opened to my eyes and I saw a beautiful light which was before me and was present in my sight.

[The vision] was in shape and color of a rainbow only the bow was down. It was perfect in shape and its motion was as the pendulum of a clock. It moved back and forth with perfect exactness. I gazed upon it for a length of time as it grew brighter and brighter until it was the purest and brightest light I ever saw. Then as quick as thought a very large building was present before my eyes. It was far enough from me to have a good view. I gazed with wonder and astonishment upon a very large and beautiful house built of hewn stone, gray rock polished in blocks with white joints with large and beautiful window and door sills and caps. I had a quating view, more of a side view. It was altogether the largest and beautifully imposing building I ever saw.

As soon as the house appeared in sight this extraordinary light was out of my sight. Presently the voice of the Good Shepherd said to me "This house you see is the temple of the living God that shall be built in this generation by the hands of the Latter-day Saints upon the consecrated spot in Jackson County, Missouri." Presently after this communication as quick as thought I found myself standing in one room in that house. To me it was a heavenly place away in front of me. In the end of the room there was a stand, a rich and beautiful stand with cushions and curtains and over the stand this marvelous light that had led me up to the Zion was waving magnificently. Then again the voice of the Good Shepherd said to me again,

“This is the temple of the living God that shall be built by the hands of the Latter-day Saints in this generation upon the consecrated spot in Jackson County, Missouri and the pure in heart shall see the face of the Father and live and this light you see is the glory of God that shall fill the house again as quick as thought.

I was removed to my former position where I gazed with wonder and amazement upon that wonderful house of God and while I was gazing upon the exterior of the house that wonderful light was not visible to me but I gazed with admiration upon the house until I was removed from the house which seemed to be instantaneous. Then the light in its glory, in its perfect motion, was waving before my eyes and it continued to grow less until it went out or passed away which seemed to occupy about the same length of time that I was going to the temple. The vision closed, I then arose to my feet and dropped into my chair, sitting, my face wet with tears exclaiming glory to God in the highest, hallelujah. I have seen the temple of the living God. I felt exceedingly happy, my wife smiled upon me saying, “Joseph, I guess you will get to heaven.”

I inquired of her how I had acted. She said after I had said a few words that I remained quiet upon my knees a considerable length of time, so that I have always known and have many times testified and bore my testimony when



preaching the gospel to the people that I knew that I knew that whatever became of the Saints, the temple of the living God should be built by the hands of the Latter-day Saints of this generation upon the consecrated spot in Jackson County, Missouri. Previously to receiving this heavenly vision, as soon as my brother Ebenezer was gone, I read the revelation on the Word of Wisdom over and over again. I believed it was the word of the Lord so I made a resolve that I would leave off drinking my beer and keep the Word of Wisdom strictly which resolve I have strictly lived up to until this day. But it was with some difficulty that I got rid of my tea. My wife was a lover of her tea and she did not like to drink it alone so she would frequently set a cup on for me. After I drank one or two cups I saw I had to say something desperate or I should never leave it off. I told her if she set another cup on for me I would throw it out of the window and break cup and saucer all to smash. The tea came no more.

We remarked that I had prayed earnestly to the Lord and that I had received a testimony that God would pour out his spirit and cause a reformation in this place which came to pass in a few years after.

Also I saw the Lord in a bright vision soon after I was baptized into the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. It seemed to be just at night. I knew him as soon as I saw him. He turned in and came to the house. He was a man

as he was when he was upon the earth. He was a beautiful, heavenly man. He had a new book white and clean. He held some argument with some of the family. His appearance, questions and answers was well worthy of the Son of God. After he had been there a while I met him in the door and embraced him and kissed him and he did me also. I asked him some questions. He answered them very wisely and then he was gone. I was the only one that knew him but I knew I had seen my Savior Jesus and I was glad.

I defended the truth which they called Mormonism boldly and manfully and I was faithful, very much devoted to the cause of God. My wife thought it too much a disgrace to be a Mormon. She opposed me some two or three years but finally concluded that she had better obey the gospel and be saved. But while she was standing out I told her I should certainly go, or gather with the Saints to Zion. Then the Lord opened the way. For the spirit of gathering with the Saints was always upon me until she did obey the gospel. Some of her pretended friends labored hard to save her from falling into the error of Mormonism. They told her that they would assist her if she would not go with me and that they would help keep the children. She went so far at one time as to say that she would never go with me together with the Mormons. I told her as the Lord lived, I should certainly gather with the people of God when the time arrived and then if she did not wish to go

with me, that I would leave with her and the children the farm and all of my property clear of encumbrances save enough to simply take me away that I might be with the Church as I thought that a very liberal offer. But she took it to heart severely and grieved and wept bitterly that I would offer to go and leave her. I repented that I had been so faithless that I had offered to leave her behind, I then told her I should never make her such an offer again but that I should certainly go to the Saints but I should never go without her and that I should not take her until she wanted to go with me or when I wanted to gather with the Saints. She also would want to go too and so it was that she was anxious to go.

I remained alone [in the Church] for three years. Only there were a few Saints about seven miles distant and I would sometimes meet with them. We enjoyed ourselves remarkably well. The Lord was with us. We contended earnestly for the faith once delivered to the Saints. In the fall and winter of 1839, Elder James Blakesly came to our place. He commenced to preach the gospel in one neighborhood and in the region round about. He had a family, wife and several children at quite a distance north of us. We wished to secure his services which we could do if we would send for his family and take care of them. A neighbor of mine by the name of Thomas S. Johnson, not yet a member of the Church, but friendly offered a room if I would help him raise and plaster it so that

we could put his friend and his family in. This we did and the Brother Chancy Nobley with team went and moved them in and I mostly supported them for quite a length of time.

Elder James Blakesley was a very fluent, interesting preacher and that was about all there was of him. The people all about the country felt curious to hear what the Mormon had to say and would open their meeting and school houses and in several of their dwelling houses for him to preach in. He soon began to baptize and the consequence was that Mormons sprang up all over the country. Soon there was a small branch organized in the neighborhood where I resided and presently he ordained me an elder and at his request the Saints there in our neighborhood chose myself to preside over them which office and appointment I received very reluctantly for I felt my weakness. It was so great I felt it was almost more than I could bear but the Lord strengthened me, the Holy Spirit helped me so that the burden was lightened and the task made easier.

Now I realize and saw the spirit of God poured out upon the people and that reformation that I had so anxiously prayed for and received a testimony that I should soon see in my neighborhood, for that was the kind of reformation that the Lord would get up that will count. It consisted of the gospel in its purity preached by a man or men having authority, people believing their testimony and yielding obedience by going down

into the water and being baptized for the remission of their sins and their receiving the Holy Ghost, the Comforter, which we did certainly receive. Some received the gift of tongues and some prophesied. I, your humble servant, did receive the gift of tongues which I covet very much, particularly the gift to sing in tongues which I did receive in a remarkable manner. Many times we sang in our congregations for Saints, for the Lord did pour out his spirit abundantly upon me, not only in singing in tongues, for we have seen strong men sit and shake like a poppy leaf, also to the great edification and comforting of the Saints. Not only that, but we have seen the sick healed. Not only in singing and speaking in tongues and speaking also, but in preaching the gospel, expounding the scriptures and in bearing testimony and in prophesying as well as in healing the sick and in casting out devils and also of visions and dreams and seeing also all which blessing we testify in the name and in the fear of God. These blessings were poured out upon and enjoyed by Latter-day Saints, or Mormons, in that neighborhood which proves to us without a shadow of doubt the truth of the work of God and his power attending his gospel and his servants on the earth. There were many baptized and several branches of the Church were organized in the regions round about by Elder Blakesley and others. Now with regard to miracles in healing, we might mention many of healing the sick. We will mention one.

There lived in our neighborhood a man by the name of Bell. He has a wife, a very respectable, amiable woman. She was a member of the Baptist Church in that place. She was taken very sick with what is called the asthma, for a number of days. It was with difficulty they kept her alive. They despaired of her life. They had an only son, a young man grown, he was not a member of the Church but he had heard me speak several times and was somewhat believing. He loved his mother and felt very anxious and concerned for her. He pled with his mother that she would consent to let him go for me as I was an elder, to administer to her for her recovery. He believed that she might be healed but she thought it would such a disgrace to have a Mormon elder to come and lay hands on her, it would hardly do. But he continued to tease and entreat his mother, thus she consented, and also his father who was a wicked man, he gave his consent. He came for me. I went with him and found her sitting up as she felt a little easier since he went for me. I had some conversation with her. It was with great difficulty that she could talk at all. I asked her if she wished me to administer. She replied that Henry, her son, was very anxious and that she had no objection.

I told her that I was a servant of the living God, that I did not feel at liberty to administer to any person that was not a member of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, unless they would covenant that inasmuch as they

received a blessing and was healed that they would obey the gospel and that if she would agree to obey the gospel I would administer to her, in case her husband was willing. He ascended and she promised to obey. I knelt with them and prayed for and with them. I then arose and anointed her head with holy oil in the name of the Lord and laid my hands upon her head and prayed for her and blessed her in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and by the authority of the holy priesthood which I held. We sealed the holy anointing which she had just received and rebuked the disease by which she was afflicted and commanded it to depart. We told her that she should be healed and would recover, live and not die. She was healed that night. The very next morning she arose and dressed herself and went to work as usual. She felt well, as well as she ever did but some weak. She thought of keeping it a secret from the world, but the spirit of the Lord said to her she must publish it to her church and to the world what great thing the Lord had done for her and how it was done in one or two days. After, it being the Sabbath day, she got their breakfast and did up the work and dressed herself and walked on foot to her meeting three-fourths of a mile. After the preaching, she asked liberty and bore her solemn testimony to what God had done for her, that she had been healed and that a servant of God had anointed her as Jesus and his apostles did in their day and laid his hands upon

her head and blessed her and healed her. She said that she knew that God had blessed her and that she was healed and that she would publish it loud and long. She wished then to repent and obey the gospel. She then walked home, got her dinner and walked three-fourths of a mile to the meeting of the Saints where I presided. She there bore her testimony to what God had done for her, restating for that meeting the circumstances of her sickness and to how near death's door she was considered and how she considered herself, how very sick she was and nigh unto death's door. That, through the interposition and pleading of her son, she had sent for me, elder of the Mormon Church, and of the severe attack of the evil one, of the mighty struggle she had with the devil and how the Lord delivered her from the two or three days she was so very sick. But now she was well and happy. She thanked her God with all her heart that she was not ashamed now but felt proud to be called a Mormon. She declared herself a ready and willing candidate for baptism. We will hear say it was but a few days and I buried her in the waters of baptism unto Jesus Christ and she became a humble and devoted follower of the meek and lowly Jesus.

At the waters of baptism when this sister was baptized, there was a pretty large attendance. The solemnities of eternity rested upon the audience, the ordinance and ceremony was beautifully performed.



*Winter 1839*

In the countenances of some in the audience it was plainly manifest by the heinous grin the displeasure of their master, the devil, but there was no threats nor any violence offered. The spirit of God was poured out, the reformation continued. For a season that neighborhood was left exclusively to the Mormons or Saints. So there were many that repented and were added to the Church by baptism. So much so that in and through the winter of 1839 we kept a hole cut in the ice of the creek where we baptized nearly all winter. The ice being about three feet thick, the boys cut a hole in the ice about ten feet long and wide enough. The congregation would gather all around the ice and we would sing and pray. I would jump down into the water, they would hand the candidate to me and they would come out like ducks. They would help them out, then we would quickly go home. We might mention many cases of healing during these baptismal ceremonies.

[Editor's note: J.L.R. tells of Caleb Lampeir's baptism.]

Soon after this they sent for me. We anointed the child and laid our hands upon it and blessed it in the name of the Lord and it was immediately healed and his wife was baptized that winter.

There were many believing the gospel that were never baptized and some fell away but the devil soon waked up

and persecuted. Lies and slanders were soon got up and held against the Saints but this was nothing strange, for so persecuted they the disciples of Jesus and the true worshippers of God in all ages of the world.

### *June 1838*

In June 8, 1838 we had a daughter born to us. A blessing from the Lord, a spritely beautiful child. My wife was still not a member of the Church, but I had faith that she would someday join for the Holy Ghost had told me that she would embrace the gospel. This took place in April 1839. (Wife, Maria Wood, baptized)

### *April 1839*

It was a great satisfaction to me to have my precious, bosom companion, one with me in the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints for it came to pass that she did not dare to resist it to stay out any longer for she believed that Mormonism was true and she was afraid that God would smite her if she fought against it any longer. She was baptized in a beautiful clear pool of water that came up on my farm in April 1839, for which I thank my Lord and my God.

*October 1840*

It came to pass that the Lord gave us another son. We called his name Joseph. He was a very sober, intelligent looking child. He was born October 31, 1840.

There were several families of Saints who came from the north and settled about Boonville in the neighborhood about us which made it more interesting for us. I was very industriously engaged in the work of the Lord and preaching the gospel everywhere round about for to go which way or where I would I could have a house to preach in and the people to preach to and I never failed to bear my testimony in the name of the Lord of the truth of the Book of Mormon and of Joseph Smith, a prophet of the living God.

I took great pleasure in preaching the gospel for I found it to be the power of God unto salvation for the holy spirit was poured out so profusely upon me, the spirit gave me utterance and my whole body was charged highly with the Holy Ghost so that my whole body was full of joy, yea joy that tongue cannot describe.

I was almost always blessed with a good, quiet attentive congregation, so much as you could hear a pin if it should fall upon the floor.

We will mention one circumstance of interest which occurred where I held a Sabbath day meeting in a large stone

schoolhouse. It was filled to overflowing and it was among strangers. I was alone. I had been preaching for nearly two hours and was about to close and dismiss the congregation when a gentleman arose and wished me to permit him to ask two questions. I said yes if the congregation was willing. He said he would vouch for the congregation. His first question was if we had a gold Bible. I answered no sir, and I gave him my Bible. He said this is the English version. I said yes sir, but we have a book we call the Book of Mormon. But sir, do you believe this Bible, said I, He said yes sir. Then sir I can prove to the understanding of any candid man by this Bible that a book should come forth like the one the Book of Mormon purports to be. He wished me to give them the proof. I said no I would not. That I should want two hours to do that subject justice and that I had an appointment for that evening at a place where I had held several meetings. I would take that subject at that meeting if he or any other ones wished to come and hear.

The second question was if I would show them a sign or perform a miracle. And it came to pass I said unto him, have I not preached the gospel unto you today as it is recorded in this Bible. Yes sir he said. A wicked and an adulterous generation, they seek a sign. But no sign shall be given it but the sign of Jonas the prophet and several other passages of Jesus' sayings to sign seekers. Then I proceeded to work a

miracle by saying unto him, sir, are you willing to be struck dumb and remain dumb for a season in order that you may know and that this people may know that I am a servant of the living God and that the gospel that I have been preaching to you is the gospel of miracles. Then you shall have a sign sir and now, I Joseph, repeated this three times raising my voice each time. The third time speaking with a great deal of emphasis and power probably such as he had never heard before, for it was spoken under the influence and power of the Holy Ghost. Then said I, you shall have a sign. He said no, no sir. I say he was afraid it would come upon him. The house, notwithstanding it was so very full of people, it was as still as death. Behold silence reigned a short time. I gazed with a feeling of surprise upon the countenances of the congregation and could read their feelings. We dismissed the meeting, and the people withdrew. There was not a word spoken, not even a whisper that I heard. Not a dog to move his tongue. They got into their sleighs and upon their horses arm their feet and went home.

This was the most remarkable sight that I had ever seen. My feeling I could not describe the reflection that I had been preaching the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ unto a people professing Christianity who had the Bible in their hands and in their houses. That they should ask for a sign and that I had boldly offered to strike a man dumb, it produced a remarkable

sensation in my mind. But my feelings were mild and serene. I felt assured that I had done my duty, had born my testimony and preached the truth and that the Lord was pleased with me. I felt remarkably solemn and good, but felt to pity the poor unbelieving Gentiles. God sends his kingdom unto them. His humble servants offer them life and salvation in the name of the Lord but their stumbling stone is so great they do not discern the day of their visitation. Therefore they must remain in their sins and perish. Wo be unto us if we preach not the gospel and wo be unto the Gentiles if they receive it not. For the hour of God's judgement is at hand and beginning already to be born out. I preached to a very attentive and good house that evening. I bore my testimony to the truth and on my way home on Monday, visited the grave of my mother reading the inscription on her gravestone. Looking upon her grave we offered a prophecy that my mother should come forth in the morning of the first resurrection and receive a crown of honor and glory in the celestial kingdom of our God notwithstanding that she had died without hearing the fullness of the gospel of Jesus Christ. She was, in her day, a very exemplary, devout, praying woman. She was a daughter of Abraham, an Israelite indeed in whom there was no guile, a pure Ephraimite.

When I drove into the neighborhood and where I went to school where I was principally raised and in the evening the schoolhouse that my father had helped to build, I there lifted

up my voice and preached to that people the first principles of the everlasting gospel. This was the first time that they had ever heard the gospel in its purity. At another time I preached in a schoolhouse that had been built near the spot where the barn stood in which I had been visited by the Lord, had received such a remarkable conversion. I preached to a very full house and attentive congregation. It being the first gospel sermon that was ever preached in that place, for there never was a man before that dared to promise to the people the Holy Ghost on conditions of repentance and baptism for the remission of sins.

The Lord had blessed me with a good sleigh and horses and things of comfort. And it came to pass that I labored much in traveling and preaching the gospel of the kingdom in the regions around about besides preaching to our little flock at home. And it came to pass that in every congregation of the wicked I bore a faithful and solemn testimony to the restoration of the gospel of miracles, that Joseph Smith was a true prophet of God, that the Book of Mormon was a revelation of God, a true history of a branch of the House of Israel who was led to and lived on this continent. I testified that it was true that it had sprung out of the earth as the prophet David had said it would come and that it was certainly the book that the prophet Isaiah said should be read and that the deaf should hear the words of the book, that the blind should

see out of obscurity and out of darkness and that the poor among them and the meek of the earth should rejoice in the Holy One of Israel. Some would believe my testimony but the great majority would discard the idea of there being any more revelation. They had the Bible and it was enough.

### *Spring 1841*

It came to pass that in the spring of 1841, as I was visiting with a Brother Charles H. Lang and family, that he requested me to bless him before I left him in the morning. We had a very interesting visit. I laid my hands upon his head in the name of the Lord and began to bless him in my mother tongue. I had said a few words and the spirit of the Lord rested upon me to talk in tongues. I broke out in an unknown tongue which I spoke to some length. Then, before I took my hands from his head, I gave the interpretation of that tongue in English. There were many good things said but among others a prophecy was uttered. We said to him that the Lord should open up the way for him and family that they should go up to Zion that season, as all the Saints that could expected to go that season. As he was a poor man with a wife and several helpless children, he had nothing else not so much as one cow.



·1841-1846·

## **Nauvoo, Illinois**

Memories of the Prophet Joseph Smith

Jospeh Lee Robinson Accepts Polygamy

It came to pass that I went up to Nauvoo that summer and took my family and three other families also, namely Brother Vosburg and family and Brother Thomas S. (R. L.) Johnson and family and a widow Lincoln and two children. Some of these I had baptized, but I could have taken Brother Lang [that name could be Oaug or Dany] and so fulfilled that prophecy. But, I knew the Lord had promised him and I was confident that he was able and that he was faithful to do all that he had promised. It came to pass that the company in the branch where Elder Dany lived [this name here looks like Dany but in any event it is the same person whose first name, as above, is Charles H.] was making preparations to start. The time had arrived within one or two days and as yet there was no prospect. But, behold the Lord remembers his promises and is faithful to perform. He sent Father Thayer to inform him, Brother Dang, that he had a good team of horses and a wagon well covered and ready for a move and that he could have the team to move his family to Zion. He thanked him very much but said, you will have to send me some money to bear my

expenses, which he did. And it came to pass that Elder Dang loaded his family and goods in and was ready to move with the company. He came up all right in the fall of 1841 to Nauvoo. He was a happy man. Now the circumstances were that Father Thayer had a crippled wife but he thought to take her by land. Then it occurred to his mind that his wife could not stand to go by land, that she would not live to get there. Then said he, what shall I do with my team? It was immediately put into his mind that Elder Lang [or Dang] had no team, though he lived several miles from him. So he got his team taken to Nauvoo, but he charged him \$18.00 for the use of it.

He set sail or left the city of Rome, Oneida County, New York, the 10th day of June 1841. We had a good journey, we traveled pitching our tents by the way as the children of Israel did. We arrived in Nauvoo in the month of August. We found the temple in progress of building. The walls were protruding above the ground. The round or oval windows were just forming above the surface of the earth. This temple was commenced in the spring of 1841 on the 6th day of April. The cornerstone was in the formation walls. The Saints were remarkably well in rearing a house unto the Most High as God had commanded his Saints to build a temple speedily in that place. I immediately set in [apparently Joseph Lee means that he immediately began to work on the temple].

Now with regards to the Latter-day Saints, they had built a temple in the land of Kirtland, Ohio and they had been driven from there by mob violence and they settled in the state of Missouri as the Lord had commanded them. Then, because they worshipped the true and living God, the governor with the entire state formed a mob and robbed the Saints of their arms and ammunition and then aimed to slaughter the Saints, men, women and children. This mob had received exterminating orders from the governor of the state but they modified it a little and drove the Saints in mass from the state of Missouri from their homes and their lands that they had bought and paid the government of the United States and had received their titles for the same. This was done in the winter. Several of our leading men, they imprisoned and purposed to kill them, but the Lord delivered them. The Lord our God softened the hearts of the people in the state of Illinois and they received the Saints and showed friendship. The Lord had prepared a place for them, the Saints, called Commerce. It was situated on the curve of the east bank of the large, grand Mississippi River. A more beautiful sight for a city there never was than this place that the Lord had prepared for his Saints. It was sickly for the Gentiles, they had died there. They had undertaken to build a town or city but they were scared to stay there. Some men owned the land and they were glad to sell it to the Mormons on very reasonable terms. They, the

Saints, purchased the land and moved directly there and commenced to build a city. The Lord also softened and blinded the authorities of the State that they gave them, the Saints, the most liberal charter that ever was given to any people on the earth. It was a blessing from Almighty God to our people. So our people gathered and rallied and commenced to build a city with a will. It went up like magic, a house of God as well. Thank God this city is situated upon the east bank of the Mississippi River. There was a large curve in the river. The river was three-fourths of a mile wide and there was a large bottom in this side with gravel rising to a bench which made it very sightly or beautiful. In this bottom there was a marsh or swampy place. The Saints drained that swamp and the same became healthy. The Saints builded houses and had good rich gardens on the same.

It came to pass that the Lord gave to the prophet Joseph a very lengthy and important revelation with regard to that place and building a temple to the most high God. He, the Almighty, also instructed him to build a Nauvoo House and gave him directions with regard to the organization of the Church. As a most chosen and perfect organization of the same, naming many and giving them for officers in the Church of Jesus Christ. He was instructed in many more things of importance, saying that this place, Nauvoo, should become a cornerstone to Zion, giving the Saints a set time to build

that temple. He said that if it, the temple, was not builded in or within the said time, that this people should be rejected with their dead. Knowing this to be the word of the Lord, it inspired the Saints to exert themselves exceedingly to use all due diligence to build that house. They soon proceeded to organize this city into wards, ordaining bishops, placing one to preside over each ward.

Now we will return to our history when we arrived into the city of the Saints. I soon found my brother Ebenezer. He had a house for us to go into. It was a log house and very near the printing house, himself, Brother Ebenezer, being the printer of the Church as he was editing the Church's organ. He had built himself a good house with two stories. He used the second for a printing office. It was near the river.

In that house the worst enemy we found or that found us was the rat. The long tailed rat which bit our little children, biting their lips and trying to eat their noses off while sleeping at night.

Our beautiful temple that we were building was situated on the bench, an eminence, a beautiful sight about the center of the city near a beautiful grove in which we had our public meetings in summers.

*Fall 1841*

It came to pass that I, Joseph Lee Robinson, purchased a lot with a small log cabin on it of a brother in the Church and moved my family into it late in the fall of 1841. It was situated about three-fourths of a mile southeast of the temple on Warsaw Street, between Mulhollon and Parley Street. We had for neighbors Martin H. Peck, Ezra Taft Benson, John Pack, George Pitkin, Elisha Edwards, James Pace, John D. Lee, Joseph Horn, Thomas Graver, Dunbar Wilson, Father Thayer, Brother Carico, Bishop Jonathan H. Hale, and a great many others. We found ourselves in rather a new and strange country, subject to somewhat different diet, but we never looked back nor wished ourselves back to Babylon from whence we had come, but we greatly appreciate the blessings and privilege of being gathered and associated with the Saints and to assist in building holy temples and of being taught in the ways of the Lord and of enjoying the blessings of the holy gospel that we might receive our washings and anointings and endowments and sealings and baptisms for our dead. That we may hear the prophet's voice. That we might see eye to eye and bring forth the Zion of our God and carry the gospel to the nations of the earth, gather the Saints abroad on the earth to the place of gathering in this, the dispensation of the fullness of times according to the testimony of holy prophets.

We are now living in the day of prophets and apostles and evangelists. Yea, a day of vision and dreams of revelations of miracles and tongues.

We have long since believed and verily known that Joseph Smith was a fine and humble prophet of God, but now our eyes to see him and our ears hear his voice, which is like the voice of the mighty thunder of heaven. Yet his language is meek and instructive. It edifieth much, but there is a power and majesty that attends his words and preaching that we never beheld in any man before. For he is a mighty prophet. A holy man of God. He had seen the Father and Son and heard their voices and had seen holy angels and heard their voices at sundry times and in divers places. He truly had been educated in the things pertaining to the kingdom of God. He was highly charged with the Holy Ghost which was a constant companion and had seen many holy prophets and apostles and had been ordained under their hands and by the gift and power of God had translated the Book of Mormon, which is the best of all books and the work of this translation was done under the most trying circumstances.

He had received many revelations from Almighty God on very important matters, had organized the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints according to the apostolic order with prophets and apostles and patriarchs. With high priests and seventies and elders, bishops, priests, teachers and deacons,

with all the gifts and graces that adorned the ancient church of Christ. And to all this we do bear our solemn testimony in the fear of God and in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. I, Joseph Lee Robinson, do verily know it is true so help me God.

My love for the prophet Joseph was truly stronger than death. It was greater than for any man that ever lived except Jesus, the first begotten of the Father.

We heard him say a great many good things. One was that if the Latter-day Saints would hold fast to him or to his garments that he would pack or carry them safe into the celestial kingdom of God. We never doubted his word. We also heard him say that God had revealed unto him that any man that ever committed adultery in either of his probations that that man could never be raised to the highest exaltation in the celestial glory and that he felt anxious with regard to himself that he inquired of the Lord that the Lord told him that he, Joseph, had never committed adultery. This saying of the prophet astonished me very much. It opened up to me a very wide field of reflection. The idea that we had passed through probations prior to this and that we must have been married or given in marriage in those probations, or there would be no propriety in making such an assertion, and that there were several exaltations in the celestial kingdom of our God. The highest exaltation we suppose to be the godhead



and we conclude there are several grades of exaltations in servants to the Gods.

Be this as it may, this is what he said and we will all know the truth of the matter some day.

We will mention several of his sayings—there is not one key or one power to be bestowed on the Church to lead the people into the celestial gate, but I have given you, showed you, and talked it over to you. The kingdom is set up. You have the perfect pattern and you can go and build up the kingdom and go in at the celestial gate taking your train with you.

Joseph Smith's instructions to the Quorum of the Twelve before his death. Again "though we or an angel from heaven preach any other gospel or introduce an order of things other than those things which ye have received and are authorized to receive from the First Presidency, let him be accursed" Joseph Smith.

Again we heard the prophet Joseph Smith say upon the stand in Nauvoo in a grove near the temple when he was speaking to a large assemblage of Saints. With many other things he said, "That if I should reveal the things that God had revealed to me, there are some on this stand that would cut my throat, or take my heart's blood."

We wondered if it was possible that that saying could be true. And again while speaking to the people in that place he supposed a case, he said suppose we send one of our elders

to Turkey or India or to a people where it was lawful to have several wives. Where they practiced polygamy and suppose he should say to them your laws are not good, you should put away your plural wives. What would they do to him? They would kick him out of their realm. Said he, what right has he to speak against their laws and usages. Said he, God doesn't care what laws they make if they will live up to them. What shall they preach? Said he, they shall preach the gospel and nothing but the pure gospel and some will believe and be baptized. He shall say nothing about the gathering but confirm them members in the Church and give to them the Holy Ghost and he shall pass along, preaching and baptizing and a man shall receive the Holy Ghost, and that shall teach him of a land of Zion and of the gathering, and when the elders shall come around again, this brother shall accost him thus saying, elder, is there not a land of Zion, a place where the Saints should gather to? The elder should not lie to him. He shall say, yes, brother, there is a land of Zion where Saints of God are required to gather to. Then, said he, to the elder, I have five wives and I love one equally as well as I do the other and now what are the laws in that land? Can I bring my five wives there and enjoy them there as well as I can here? Said the prophet, yes the laws in Zion are such that you can bring your wives and enjoy them here as well as there, the elder shall say to that brother.

The prophet went on preaching the gospel of the kingdom as if he had not said anything strange or awful, but this to me was the first intimation that I ever received that polygamy would ever be practiced or lawful with this people.

The prophet went to his dinner and as it might be expected, several of the first women of the Church collected at the prophet's house with his wife and said thus to the prophet Joseph. Oh Mr. Smith, you have done it now, it will never do for it is all but blasphemy. You must take back what you have said today. It is outrageous. It would ruin us as a people.

The prophet knew it would not avail anything to contend with the sisters. Said he, I will have to take that saying back and leave it as though there had been nothing said. For he was aware it was a very large pill for them or the people to swallow. But, as the Lord had revealed the principle of plural marriage to him and had informed him that the time had fully come that that doctrine should be taught and practiced by his people, the Latter-day Saints, as it was a very important item pertaining to the fullness of the gospel. He deemed it wisdom to throw out something for the people to reflect upon that they might begin to digest that very important doctrine which belongs to the dispensation of the fullness of times. But prior to this, he had besought the Lord to take this instruction from him that he might not have the responsibility of introducing and putting into practice that order of things because of the

great opposition it would meet because of the traditions of the people.

But it came to pass the Lord instead of releasing him from that burden, he sent an holy angel with a drawn sword unto him, saying unto him, Joseph, unless you go to and immediately teach that principle (namely polygamy or plural marriage) and put the same in practice, that he, Joseph, should be slain for thus saith the Lord, that the time has now come that I will raise up seed unto me as I spoke by my servant Jacob as is recorded in the Book of Mormon, therefore, I command my people.

Now with regard to other sayings of the prophet, but a short time before the martyrdom of the prophet Joseph as he was Lieutenant General of the Nauvoo Legion, he called the Legion together and addressed them in a very affectionate and powerful manner as he was standing before a little frame near his mansion with the Legion and a great many others around him. He addressed us with regard to many things and several of his sayings I shall always remember. He says, do you love me? We answered in a loud affirmative, yes. He says, will you die for me? Yes, with loud acclamation the Legion responded, heartily responded yes. Then said he I will die for you. You are my boys and you shall be my boys through all eternity. He unsheathed his sword and raised it towards heaven and said with, a voice like thunder, he said, in the name of the

Lord God that if there was one drop of innocent blood shed by our enemies in this time of persecution (as he was at that time under an arrest as the officers had served a writ on him and he would have to go immediately to Carthage to be tried and it looked gloomy and dark) that he would never sheath his sword again until victory was won for the Saints. That he would fight them with the thunder of heaven with lightnings, whirlwinds, hailstones and pestilence and devouring flames until they, his enemies, should be wasted until there was not a dog to move his tongue against Zion. And, as he was on his way to Carthage he said, I go as a lamb to the slaughter. I die innocent, I have a conscience void of offense toward God and men. Suffice it to say that he was slaughtered in Carthage Jail so that he never returned alive to Nauvoo. We shall say more of him hereafter.

We will now return to his preaching in favor of polygamy. In the morning he declared the law in Zion should favor plural wives. It surprised) me much. It was the first intimation that I ever had as we remarked in favor of polygamy. I retired to my dinner. Several of the brethren stopped into my house and we talked about the preaching. I remarked to them that it was not likely that we should have the privilege of getting more wives but that the law would be framed so that they that had several wives could retain them and they did not know any better.

We attended the meeting in the afternoon. The prophet Joseph came upon the stand. He arose to address the meeting. He said brethren and sisters, I take back what we said this morning and leave it as though there had nothing been said. It amused me somewhat, but did not take with me for I was satisfied that he meant what he had said in the morning. The meeting passed and the day also and two or three days passed away and it was in my mind constantly. I felt satisfied it was of God for the spirit bore testimony, and it came to pass that on Wednesday morning following as I was working with E. T. Benson, I received the first revelation upon that subject. It came as a flash of lightening to my mind. I stopped short, saying I have received a revelation. I said this to Brother Benson. What is it, said he. I will tell you inasmuch as the Lord reveals the law that shall give the brethren a right to bring his five wives and enjoy them in Zion and inasmuch as you and I are members of the Church of Jesus Christ, in full fellowship, it cannot prohibit us from having more than one wife and be just. Said he, that is true.

That was the first revelation that I received on polygamy and also the first that Brother Ezra T. Benson received, except what the prophet said the sabbath before, but it was not the last that I received for it continued to reveal to me from time to time as the scriptures sayeth, the Lord giveth line upon line, precept upon precept, a little and there a little, and so He

leadeth His Saints along from step to step. But that one word from the prophet gave me a starting point. It was as Alma in the Book of Mormon explained. The word implanted in my heart as a good seed sown in good ground. It was received in faith. It commenced to swell and it sprouted and grew from faith to a perfect knowledge so that I can say, as Paul, if any man or an angel from heaven preacheth any other gospel than we have preached and ye have received, let him be cursed. So, I can say with propriety, if any man or an angel from heaven comes and preaches any other doctrine than what the prophet Joseph did preach. If he says that polygamy is not of God I do verily know he lies, therefore let him be accursed.

And now my dear readers, while I am on this subject, I propose to make known to you in my weak and clumsy way of writing how the Lord revealed to me the truth of the doctrine of plural marriage, or polygamy.

I had been talking to some confidential persons on polygamy. As we have remarked, I never had received one word from any man living except that one word from the prophet, only as the Holy Ghost taught me and it also taught me some of the future destiny of this people.

As I remarked to some, being interrogated, what will become of this people, this being soon after the martyrdom of Joseph and Hyrum? As the remarkable vision, also which, or in which the Lord revealed to me, unworthy me, the certainty

or truth of that very remarkable sacred, interesting doctrine, pertaining to the fullness of the gospel of the Son of God, which had to be revealed in the dispensation of the fullness of times or at the commencement of that dispensation. The Father had a large number of spirits, very intelligent, noble spirits, spirits that had been kept back, kept in reserve because they were needed to come forth to be born under or in the priesthood to perform a certain very important work. This is what the Lord meant, when I will raise up seed unto me. I will command my people. The time now has fully arrived and it became necessary to command His people. I feel very, very thankful to my Father and God that he thought enough of me or thought me worthy to reveal unto me His will and a knowledge of that sacred doctrine.

Now one word with regard to the future of this people as we should have remarked in answer to that question. I told some of them that the Lord would take this people and lead them way west into a goodly land and plant them and multiply them and discipline them and bring them under the rod and into the bonds of the covenant and make them a great and mighty people and that they should never come under the Gentile yoke again as they had been or that this kingdom should never be given into the hands of another people to drive them again.



*1844*

I will now proceed to relate a heavenly vision and revelation which was given to me, Joseph L. Robinson, on the subject of polygamy in Nauvoo, Hancock County, Illinois in the year 1844 or 1845. As we remarked, my mind was exercised upon that subject after hearing the prophet of God declare it should become a law in Zion. The Lord chastened me in the spirit for the space of about 20 hours in a manner or more severe than I had ever been chastened before. But behold the cloud of darkness passed away and the sun of righteousness did beam forth. My mind became calm and serene as the summer morning. I felt exceedingly happy in my mind. I was alone in my shop and I was a chair maker. It was about four o'clock in the afternoon and I was standing at my turning lathe, the sun shining brightly.

The vision opened on this wise. Presently before me there was a light, straight as straight and narrow, very narrow, its color very bright and beautiful. The lower end of this remarkable light, or path, was about three feet from the earth before me and its elevation some 30 degrees and it extended away out of sight into the heavens. Presently there came a voice in the spirit, saying, this light you see is the straight and narrow path that leads to life. A pause for a few moments between each sentence. Polygamy is an institution

of heaven, as pure a principle as ever emanated from the gods. It is for the purpose of raising up seed unto the Lord. No man has the right to crook a finger or wink an eye or do anything whatever to court a second wife until he first obtains permission from him that holds the keys of the kingdom of God upon the earth.

Any man that enters into this holy order in any other way other than upon the principle and with an eye single to the glory of God, he is damned. Also, a man should be very careful not to interfere with the rights of any good man as this would be handling sharp edged tools.

And it came to pass that I looked and beheld multitudes of people upon the earth. They looked very much like a swarm of bees as they were buzzing and all seemed searching altogether after the things of the earth, as I could see myriads of them and could not discover one of them searching after God or the things of God. I then saw things in a clearer light than I ever had before. It was then that I quaked exceedingly with fear and trembling before having my eyes on the straight and narrow path and being so exceedingly straight and narrow and the only chance to get to life was to find that and follow it, whilst the way was so broad that leads to death and the multitudes seemed to be travelling therein.

There was a pause of a few moments between each sentence and through this entire vision this remarkable

straight and narrow light was before my eyes and as Paul said, I did not know whether I was in the body or out of the body, I could not tell.

The vision closed. I found myself standing by my turning lathe. I had seen a vision and received revelation from Almighty God through the medium of the Holy Ghost so that I did know that polygamy was of God and learned of its purpose and design and learned how to proceed in that holy order. Now with regard to this doctrine, of the truth and certainty of the same, I never did nor never can doubt again.

### *August 1842*

As we remarked, we moved into a small log cabin with our little family in the fall of 1841, but our little son Joseph was taken sick and remained sickly until he died which was in August 25th, 1842. It was quite a sorrow and grief for us but we felt to kiss the rod and acknowledge the hand of God in it. We tried hard to save him. He was such a bright, spritely promising child.

The Prophet Joseph Smith came to me on some business whilst this child was sick. I had him in my arms and I went out to talk with him as he sat upon his horse. He remarked, your child is sick, said he, you should get some bitters for him. I then asked the prophet what my tithing was. Said he, your

tithing is one-tenth of what you have when you commence to pay tithing. After that, one-tenth of your entries annually.

Through the blessings of God and with my little means and hard labor and management, I soon built me a good brick house with three rooms one above the other with a good fireplace in each room. One was a cellar kitchen with three windows, a good fireplace and a brick oven. The third, or upper room, the entire size of the house, 16 by 24, with a good fireplace and windows, suitable for a schoolroom. I fitted it up for a school, put in benches and writing tables and benches and table and water bucket and broom. I got it all in readiness with my own hands and means and I hired a good female teacher or sister in the Church. I agreed to pay her, I then informed the neighbors that a school would start at my house on Monday morning next and I wanted them to send their children to school and those that could I wanted them to help me pay the teacher while them that were not able to pay, that it should be free and that they should send their children to school just the same.

Monday morning came and children also. They filled the room and all the teacher could do justice by. We had a good school and in the fall I hired a good man teacher on the same principle and the house full to overflowing and it continued to be so until the burning took place in Lima, a town about 30 miles distant. The mob swore that the Mormons should not

stay there. They gathered in bands nightly and set fire to their houses and hay and grain stacks and upset their lives and played regular smash with them the Saints in that town.

Consequently we had to go to help them to come to Nauvoo and to take them into our house and give them succor, and then and not until then did our school stop. We had to stop our school and let one of the families in the room. All this and similar atrocities were fitted upon the Mormons, not because they were wicked but because they feared God and kept his commandments.

### *September 1843*

In this house was born to us another son, our first born in Zion. We called his name Jeremiah W. A bright promising child. We were proud of him. We thank God our Heavenly Father for him but we had to part with him also. He was born in the city of Joseph. Hancock, County Illinois, September 21, 1843.

He died August 25, 1844. One or two days before his death, as I held him in my arms just after the setting of the sun, his mother was milking the cow, the Holy Ghost said to me, Ordain this child to the high priesthood, I did so. I laid my right hand upon his head and there and then said the ceremony and gave him a regular ordination to the high priesthood. I never had heard of the like, but was satisfied that it was right. I said

to his mother, Let us try to save this child if we can, if not let us be thankful for the three we have. She says, Don't say that. How can we spare this child? But we had to spare it. We buried him by the site of his brother Joseph in our lot, here together let these sweet dear brothers lay. Sleep in peace until the resurrection day.

As we remarked, the city of Nauvoo was organized into wards and was named or called the city of Joseph. Jonathan H. Hale was ordained Bishop over the 9th Ward, where I lived. And he selected Thomas Casico and me for his counselors. He ordained me a high priest and set us apart as his counselors and we acted with him as such.

We had in our ward a great many poor and sick and also a great many cases of difficulties to settle so that we had an abundance to do, sometimes busy night and day administering to the sick and gathering something and taking it to them and burying their dead. We acted as bishop and counsel and teachers, did all the work and we tried to perform our duty and do our work well. Sometimes the bishop and his other counselor were sick and the entire labor involved upon me alone and when I had I would impart of my store of provisions to the sick and poor. When I had none, I would take sometimes my little wagon and sometimes my basket on my arm and go and beg for them and carry it to them that they, the poor, did not ask in vain for we always administered to their wants.

As yet we had no meetinghouse or tabernacle to meet in but we were doing the best we could in our poverty. In the winter season we would meet where best we could, but generally in our ward in my house as I had the largest room in the ward. There were some 14 high priests in the 9th Ward. They have a practice of meeting one evening every week and we had good meetings, a punctual attendance and a very good flow of the spirit in our quorum meetings and also in our ward meetings we were greatly blessed.

We will now mention our exhortations or prophecy given in tongues one Sunday evening in my house. On this evening Brother Archibald Patten gave us a very lengthy and spirited lecture in tongues. E. T. Benson wished someone to give the interpretations on Brother Patten and said Brother Robinson could give it. I immediately arose to my feet and commenced by saying the Saints should continue their labors in building the temple of God in that place to completion so far that they should receive their endowments in the same and after the Lord should remove the Saints west out from these United States into a goodly land among the Lamanites in the midst of the Rocky Mountains. And there that they should preach the gospel to the house of Joseph and that many of them would be baptized and that the elders should go to the nations of the earth and preach the gospel to them and gather out many of the honest in heart and gather them out and that

the work of the Lord should prosper with mighty power and that he would establish His Saints and increase them and bless them abundantly and that he would raise a mighty army of the Lamanites and that they should come forth from the mountains and that they should fall upon the Gentiles with mighty power and that a trembling and fear should fall upon these Gentiles but they should have no power to resist them that as well might the puny arm of man be raised to stop the mighty northwest winds for the Gentiles to stop this mighty army. At that time when I was saying these words I could see them coming over the hills across the river west of Nauvoo. They looked terrible as a dark cloud. Then I said they should avenge the blood of the prophets that was shed in Carthage Jail and that Governor Ford would not execute one man (as Governor Ford at this time with an armed force was in pursuit of the murderers saying that he would bring them to justice).

But that this army of Lamanites should avenge the blood of the prophets. Yea, that they should make a clean job of it. This is only a synopsis of the prophecy but it gives some of the particular parts of the prophecy. We consider it a very interesting prophecy that would be literally fulfilled.

We will mention one incident or case of healing which took place in my house, myself being the blessed party. I was at the time very sick with pleurisy of a very bad form so that I was



unable to do any work. I had been administered to the Sunday evening before by Brother Archibald Patten and was partially healed but not entirely so that I went to work on Monday at the lathe. I did get very warm and then I would go out in the cold wind and it came on worse than ever. I suffered severely until the next Wednesday evening the time the high priest quorum should meet. I fasted and prayed myself the best I could for a blessing. When the brethren of the quorum came and told Brother Patten how unwise I had been and how bad I was, that it was with difficulty that I could get my breath and that they wished him to take the lead and to proceed as he felt, and that I wanted all the brethren to lay on hands. He said that I was old enough to know better than to have been so careless but they must try again. He had them all kneel while he was mouth in prayer then he anointed me with oil in the name of the Lord. They all laid their hands upon me and all touched me with their right hand and Brother Patten was mouth and sealed the holy anointing and rebuked the destroyer with all his influence and power over me. Then he uttered an extremely rich and unbounded blessing. He pronounced upon my head it seemed to me there were no things omitted in the shape of blessings, but he pronounced upon. I was wonderfully and joyfully surprised. One part of the blessing I do know that I received instantly and I was healed, clean perfectly healed of this pleurisy pain for it was clean and gone forever and in

the midst of this administration I breathed out but could not feel the least particle of pain and could never after. So I do know that the gift of healing is in this Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, vulgarly called the Mormons. We the servants of the Lord or we Mormons labored diligently and faithfully in building the temple of the living God in Nauvoo for the Lord had said unto us that He would grant unto us a sufficient time to build that house and that if we would go to with all our might and build that house in the time appointed that we should be blessed and not rejected as a Church with our dead. So, we felt determined to build that holy house. I labored constantly the tenth day. I well remember one tithing day for our ward in the fall, a great many were sick and I was quite sick but not confined to my bed. I took my team and started for the quarry to haul rock for the temple. While on the way to the quarry I felt inspired to say, in the name of the Lord, I am going to haul rock for the temple but I am sick, wilt thou help me oh Lord. Yes, the Lord will heal me. I know he will and surely he did heal me right up at that time. Yes, I was healed right there and then I drove to the quarry but found no one there but heavy rocks quarried out. Presently Brother Jonathan Taylor came with his team. He was in a grunting order but we went to work with a will and rolled on rocks on our wagons. We two alone that should astonish the world, rocks that to my judgement would weigh from ten to

twenty hundred pounds or uppers we handled all day the Lord helping us.

One more little incident I might mention where I received a blessing. At the time our dear brethren in Lima were visited with fire and the mob came by night and put the torch to their stacks and stocks and dwelling houses and burned them out. We had to go out with our teams and bring them into Nauvoo. Some of our people were sick, but they had to hustle out into the open air or burn up. I was at the time afflicted with the shaking ague, every other day regularly would be very sick but a call was made and I went on Monday, my well day, and got my horse shod. Tuesday was the day set for the team to go for them. The day for me to have my shake and fever but I started out for a load and as the Lord lives the ague did not find me. I had no more while in Nauvoo.

### *June 1845*

And it came to pass the Lord gave unto us a daughter, a beautiful Intelligent child. She was born June 12, 1845 almost one year after the martyrdom of the prophet Joseph and Hyrum Smith, Patriarch. We rejoiced greatly and thanked God for in the gift of our dear little daughter. We named her Mary Elizabeth a heavenly treasure. But the destroyer seemed bent on the destruction of this child also. For some cause or

reason we do not know, she became afflicted. She had fits and it seemed we could not stop them. We prayed for her. We administered oil and the laying on of hands and called in the elders. We doctored her but to no purpose only she would seem to get a little better. We took her to the patriarch, Uncle John Smith, he blessed her and after he administered to her he looked at her and said, There is a very intelligent spirit in that tabernacle and if you save her on the earth you have to exercise a large amount of faith for the destroyer seeks to destroy such that they should not remain on the earth. I then told him what I had done for our deceased son, that I had from the impression of the spirit, ordained him a high priest. He said that was right. He had ordained one a high priest, a little chap that was about to die. He considered it very proper.

Those stubborn fits would not stop. We had heard the prophet Joseph say inasmuch as any member of a family was sick, if the heads of the family would fast three days they should get better. We knowing him to be a true prophet of God therefore we believed what he said. My wife proposed a fast, I replied if you think that you can stand it nursing a child I certainly will try it. She said that she would do anything she could to save that child. So we set about it with a will. We ate our dinners today as usual but when night came we ate no supper and morning came we ate no breakfast. She

did her housework and I went to our wagon shop and worked all day as usual and this was the winter before our exit from Nauvoo to the Rocky Mountains. Our ward was organized into a company to build wagons and to make preparations to leave that place in the spring so that I was obliged to work whether sick or well, whether eating or fasting although at this time I was severely afflicted with rheumatism in my back and hip and had taken cold through taking off some flannel underclothes and sudden change of weather. With all this we had also to fast and pray for this we had decided. The first day was the hardest day for me. The second day came and no eating but plenty of work and I did not suffer as much that day. On the third day I came to work as usual. I proposed to my wife that she was nursing a child so that she must have a little crust and some food occasionally. But neither of us ate a mouthful at any time or anything whatsoever. During the breakfast, the third day noon came we ate no dinner until suppertime came and we feel satisfied that our three day fast was complete. We ate our supper and as yet there had been no change with the fits and the child or with my lameness. We retired to our beds to rest after saying our prayers as usual, but as the Lord liveth, these fits upon our dear child stopped and she had no more while we lived in Nauvoo and my lameness went entirely away this night. We testified that we received and acknowledge this signal favor and the great blessing from the hand of God our

Heavenly Father. We are led to believe that if the Latter-day Saints would more thoroughly repent of their sins and clean themselves up, fast and pray more and use the doctors less, we would be a great people and there would be a great many more cases of healing than there are.

It came to pass that the devil was mad, the people imagined vane things and the wicked raged and mashed upon us. It was with great difficulty we could keep them off of us, till we could build that temple so that we could get our endowments, washings, anointing and sealings which the Lord had purposed we should receive before we should go into the wilderness. The Lord did truly purpose to take his people into a good land from under the Gentile yoke where he could plant them, multiply them and teach and train them to his liking preparatory to the redemption of Zion. The Lamanites have to be taught and be baptized and a great army organized and prepared to redeem Zion and avenge the blood of the prophets, which mighty work shall be accomplished as the Lord liveth.

They, the Illinois legislature, performed the ceremony of tearing up our charter. Yes, they tore our Nauvoo city charter all to pieces and left us without a shadow of law or have any law officers to protect us. But there was no law against an organization of bishops and deacons, so that there was some chance for us poor Mormons yet. We were soon set up into groups with a bishop and deacons. I was a bishop with several

brethren as deacons. I stood guard with them. A part of us would watch till 12 o'clock until our relief came and when they were on the ground they would retire but while we were a chartered town we had our police and military in good running order. Our military was named the Nauvoo Legion and when mustered presented a very formidable force. They were a flexible army. I had a commission signed by the Governor of Illinois, a commissioned officer in the Nauvoo Legion. There were many reports of gatherings and threats by our enemies, that they would come and capture some of our citizens or cause great destruction among us so that we were obliged to keep constantly a strong guard. I was always on hand to do my part many a night on guard some nights all night long with our arms expecting every moment that a heavy mob would be in upon us. But they feared to come after our city charter was taken from us and some strange suspicious characters would make their appearance in our city. When they did so our boys with their long ugly looking broad knives would collect around these strangers with a stick in their hand would gather around and commence to whittle with their knives while slowly moving toward the strangers keeping up their whittling. This would greatly frighten the men and they would leave. Our boys would leave an opening for the stranger if he inclined to move but if he refused to go they would advance until their knives would stop against his coat.

Some of these gentlemen would enter complaints to President Young of how they were treated by these whittlers. All the satisfaction they would get he would say to them, they have taken away our charter we have no laws. We can't do anything for you so if they would not leave in a hurry they would be whittled out of town.

It came to pass the work on our temple was pursued with vigor. We will here relate a very interesting vision one of our brethren had given unto him as near as I can remember it. He related that when he was a laborer up on the temple it was manifested unto him a short time before the death of the prophets Joseph and Hyrum. As he was returning from his home one evening, it was sometime before sunset, a beautiful day, he had reached his small gate that led to his house. The vision opened, he saw our people in commotion seemingly in trouble. They were in arms and a dark cloud arose. It looked very gloomy and doleful, yea, frightful as the cloud passed over and when they came out their arms had passed away and so had their prophets Joseph and Hyrum, for he saw them no more and the people were in great mourning. Presently the twelve with Brigham at their head, they led the Church and next he saw the Church moving west. He could see them for hundreds of miles with their covered wagons and tents moving west. He saw them settling in a lovely land. They built up cities and temples and spread abroad exceedingly.



By and by he saw the dark cloud rising and spreading over this people. It looked gloomy and fearfully dangerous. He saw there were three iron hoops around this church and the twelve and others with their wooden mallets thumping away brightening up these hoops. It still grew more dark and fearful and they kept turning up the hoops and it came to pass the hoops burst and the people went right away directly every way. They were so scared they ran. As near as he could calculate nearly or quite one half of the people left the body of the church. Then he said it seemed that before the hindermost of them were fairly out of sight, this dark and dreary cloud passed away and the sunbeam of righteousness shined forth and all that were left were exceedingly happy. Now, with him a time of reflection and inquiry, says he, "I came within a hair's breath of leaving also. Oh how thankful I am, said he, that I did not leave the Church." Then an inquiry arose in his mind and he explained, "Oh Lord why was it so that such a dark and fearful cloud and feeling should have come over and upon the people?" The answer came directly that God had a great blessing to pour out upon his people and that there were a great many that had a name with his people that were not worthy and that in his wisdom he took this method to purge them out. Said he (the temple laborer) the answer that I received perfectly satisfied me. He saw no thing but these afrighted ones who went to join, but that they were so frighted

that they ran away. Then it came to pass that the authorities of the Church led the Saints to a kind of a large grand room where the tables were set and loaded with the sweet meats and all the precious things and the people feasted and they were exceedingly happy.

Many things transpired with us while in Nauvoo of a very interesting character. One important question was raised which never left my mind nor inquiry until a satisfactory solution was obtained. I received a revelation on the subject. The question was this, did our spirits exist in eternity with a father or eternally with God? Some elders said that the prophet Joseph should have said that our spirits existed eternally with God. The question arose then, how is it that God is the father of our spirits? I wondered, studied and prayed over it for I did want to know how it could be. I inquired of several of the brethren how that could be a father and son and the son as old as the father. There was not a person that could or would even try to explain the matter.

But it came to pass that in one time a vision was opened, the voice of the spirit came unto me saying that all matter was eternal. That it never had a beginning and that it should never have an end and that the spirits of all men were organized of a purer material or matter, upon the principle of male and female, so that there was a time when my spirit, my immortal spirit, as well as every other man's spirit that was ever born

unto the world, that is to say there was a moment when the spirit was organized and begotten or born so that the spirit has a father and the material or matter that our tabernacles are composed of is eternal and as we understand are organized on the principle of male and female. This revelation explained this mysterious question so that I understood it and that our bodies are organized of a coarser material.

It came to pass that I, Joseph, did thank the Lord for this intelligence. And it came to pass that the Gentiles that should have been our friends became our bitter enemies, as they had in Kirtland, Ohio, as also they were In Missouri, our people had been driven from both of these places and now they meant to drive us from Illinois.

They sent a delegation to confer with our leaders to see whether we would leave the state and when, saying the Mormons had to leave at all hazards. Our leader consulted with the people and we all agreed to leave the country in the spring. They made arrangements to that effect with the mob. We thought it better for us to leave than to be slaughtered which we should have been, so that we worked with all diligence to prepare for our exit. We did not like the idea of leaving our beautiful temple until we had received our endowments, washings and anointings and sealings.

And behold it came to pass that the old serpent, the devil, sent a flood of waters after her, the church, to swallow her

up, to destroy her. For it rained torrents upon them but the earth helped the woman so that she swallowed up the water, as she was not destroyed. It came to pass when the devil found that he could not destroy her with the flood of waters, he went directly to Washington, to the seat of government and inspired our head officials to set a trap for the Church of Jesus Christ to destroy her, to demand and bring, up 500 good efficient men to immediately muster into the service of the United States to fight their battles. This was one of the most unreasonable, wicked requirements that could be made under the circumstances of a religious, law abiding community of American citizens, exiled, driven by mob violence and murdering their prophets, driven three times from their temples and cities and hard-earned homes. A people driven away from civilization (falsely so called) among the wild savages to hunt for themselves a home and have to make it the fourth time. Never under such circumstances had a people had such an unjust requirement made of them. They (the authorities in Washington) had no idea that we would respond. Then, said they, we will have a pretext. We will send an army and we will easily destroy them, yea exterminate them from the earth. But, they knew not the mind of the Lord, neither understood they His counsel. And it came to pass, yes Your Honor, says the prophet Brigham, your men are on hand. Yes brother, said brother Brigham, we must respond to this call.

The 500 soldiers must be sent immediately said he. If they cannot be raised without, I shall go. The 500 were forthcoming. They went and what were the consequences? It is, or was, or vital importance to this Church. It saved the Saints the heavy brawl that was aimed for her destruction and it left 500 families, or less or more, as the case might be, without a husband, a father, or protection in that Indian wilderness country with scanty allowance of bed and clothing, with but little or no prospect of raising or getting more. Yes verily, they were left upon the mercy of God and the people of the Saints who like Abraham, by faith were seeking a country that they knew not of, even an asylum, a land of peace, a place where they might raise some bread and prepare themselves a home once more upon this our mother earth. A land away from Christian civilized mob violence, even to a place which God had reserved for them, His people.

Our people made a beautiful font in the basement of the temple underneath resting upon twelve beautiful oxen where many had been baptized for their dead and many for their health. I had been baptized for some of my dead and had one of my little sons for health.

We prepared some rooms in the temple so that the holy ordinances could be performed, so that the Saints could receive their blessings.

*January 1846*

Our enemies were so desperate and determined that we should leave the country (so much so) that our brethren were obliged to arm themselves while working on the temple. We labored with all our might and the Lord helped us so that we commenced giving and receiving our endowments about the commencement of the year 1846. I received my endowments about this time and my first wife, Maria, was sealed to me January 13, 1846. My second wife, Susan, January 31, 1846.

It was a hurrying time. A great many thousand people received their endowments in a comparatively short time and we were very thankful to get so great blessings in that holy, holy house. Surely, it was a very beautiful, imposing house. It cost us so much labor and means, but we never regretted what we had done for we considered ourselves well and amply paid for all we had done. We counted it the Lord's house and we considered ourselves the Lord's also. All that we do, we do in the name of the Lord and for the Lord and all that we have is the Lord's, for it is in Him that we live and move and have our being and truly we are very exceedingly happy people, hated, slandered, belied and persecuted, the most of any people on earth. Yet, we are full of charity toward all men, but more especially for or toward the household of faith. We pray for our enemies. We know they do not realize what they

are doing, that they are fighting against God and persecuting His high priests.

On July 12, 1843, the Lord gave to the prophet Joseph a revelation on the eternity of the marriage covenant, including plurality of wives. But this revelation was not made public so that we do know the heavy persecutions and murderings and drivings and robbings that were perpetrated upon the Latter-day Saints prior to their being driven into the Rocky Mountains. These were not on account of polygamy, but as it always has been, the true worshippers of God were always unpopular, drawing down the wrath of their enemies upon them.

It came to pass, the twelve with many others left Nauvoo in the winter of 1846, with their families and set out verily to seek an asylum in the west. Yes, verily, also those 500 of our dear brethren performed their mission admirably well. They were subjected to a great amount of hardship and privation and suffering, so much so that some few had to succumb to death. But they accomplished a perfect victory for the United States, for it came to pass when the word was conveyed to the Mexicans that the Mormon army was coming, that they would soon be there, that they were a legion and that nothing could stand before them, verily this report was the cause of bringing the Mexicans to terms of a treaty which was effected between the Mexicans and the United States in which a large territory of country was deeded to the United States and it

was the very place where our people afterward located in the midst of the Rocky Mountains. In the treaty with the Mexicans they agreed to receive them with their religions as they were and behold our people are here in the Rocky Mountains with their publicly proclaimed polygamy in practice, so by rights the United States should leave us alone with out polygamy.

And it came to pass that our brethren, the Mormon Battalion, did not have to fire a gun just as it was said to them before they left the camp of Israel. Yes, President Brigham Young prophesied they should not have to fight not so much even as to fire one gun which is another testimony in favor of a prophet.

We will now narrate some little Incidents of a little journey out to Chicago. When we left the State of New York we sent a box of goods by water to Chicago. I engaged a load of passengers, elders going on missions, mostly elders Father Sessions, Thomas Grover, T. J. [or T. S.] Johnson and son, and one Alfonso Green and wife. I took my team, a pair of horses and wagon and all aboard and away we went flying across the prairie through Laharpe and Monmoth and several very nice little towns. But the whole country of these western states is one whole plain or vast prairie only some small skirts of timber in places of water only where it is formed and fed down by animals, it is a vast meadow of very rich soil when well tilled will produce largely of corn and other grains.



On our way out we had a very lively, interesting time. I discussed many important religious subjects and the scenery mostly was interesting. I well recollect one evening indeed I never shall forget it. We camped by a lone house by a small stream of water. The place was called the Halfway House. It was away in the prairie some ten or twelve miles from a house either way. We arrived there a little before night. We had a good pleasant time, supper over, the company, it became dark. Our company had made their beds and all retired to rest, some in the house, some in the wagon and some under the wagon, all but myself. The spirit wrought upon me and I could not feel like going to bed. I felt like taking a stroll out into the prairie. I longed for a good season of prayer to commune with the heavens. I retired to where my horses were hobbled and grazing quietly. I here knelt down upon the ground and poured out my soul to God in solemn and humble prayer and had an exceedingly sweet and interesting time. I probably remained there for hours, but before leaving the place I was standing upon my feet gazing with wonder and amazement upon the bright and beautiful stars in yonder heavens, admiring their beauty and order. In a particular manner, the North Star which always remains to us stationary and in the dipper and all that train being of one class of stars all so majestic and with such order and exactness circling around the North Star every 24 hours. While I was thus contemplating the wonderful works

of God and praising his holy and great name, the voice of the spirit came unto me saying, inasmuch as you will do what you can in the times of your poverty for the building up of the kingdom of God on the earth, the time shall come when you shall become rich in gold and in silver, in houses and in land, in horses and in chariots, in wives and in children, in silks and in satins, in flocks and in herds, in servants and in handmaids. And while these different kinds of goodies were called over, they did glisten with exceeding luster before my eyes. I felt to thank the Lord God of my fathers for this great and good promise. I thought the sight of this could abundantly pay me for the time and trouble, yea a thousand times, I asked the Lord to help me to fulfill on my part.

I retired to my bed more than satisfied. I well knew it was no fiction. I knew the voice of the good shepherd.

In the morning we travelled on all right and arrived in the city of the Gentiles. It is a very large and fine city. We parted with the brethren and received my goods, took one passenger and returned home in safety and found all well.

In the winter of 1846 I took my second wife and went into Missouri. She had some land and property there which we sold bringing back with us three yolk of cattle and some cows and other property which proved a great help to us insomuch that we were obliged to go in the spring. At about this time we received a letter from my first wife's father stating that

he thought we had gone far enough on the Mormon track and that if we could think so too and stop and that I should go out into the country and hunt me up a farm that would suit me that could be bought him and send him the price that he would send the money to pay for it. Then we could have it and go into it and go to living. But said he, I would not wish to advise you in this matter. If you think best to go ahead and see it out, well I have \$200 you can have if it can be safely sent.

I sat down and wrote him a letter and sent directly to him saying to Father Zephenia Wood,

*Dear Sir,*

*Your letter came only to hand. We receive the same with pleasure. We were exceedingly glad to hear from you and mother and friends. We only wish that you all were in the faith and with us together with us. We thank you very much for your very kind offer. We say God bless you but as it regards Mormonism, we are greatly in love with it simply because it is the truth. Yes, the plain simple solid truth and nothing else, and that truth will prevail. We look for the little fulfillment of the prophet Daniel's prophecy speaking of the little stones taken out of the mountain without hands, which is nothing less than Mormonism or the kingdom of God which shall roll forth and fill the whole earth. It shall break in pieces all*

*other kingdoms and grind them to powder, simply because our gospel is a gospel of peace and is truth, therefore all the world is or shall be arrayed against it with deadly hostility and will persecute rob and murder and drive the Saints until they the Saints shall become thoroughly cleansed from the false traditions and impurities of the earth.*

·1846-1848·

## **Crossing the Plains to Utah**

Assignment to return to Nauvoo, Illinois

Winter Quarters, Nebraska

[Editor's note: Great Grandfather's journal page number 46 is missing. Apparently it told of the group of saints with which he and his family were travelling had left Nauvoo and were on their way to the great Salt Lake valley].

June 27, we camped at a beautiful grove and stayed over the Sabbath. We found several of the brethren there and had some conversation with Brother Benjamin Clapp (he put us in mind somewhat of a clap of thunder when he spoke) but he was considered a very good speaker. We were talking

upon the principle of adoption. Said he, when in the temple at Nauvoo, in conversation with patriarch John Smith, I said to him, Is a man obliged to be adopted to someone or can a man build up his kingdom alone? Said he, I guess he can if he chooses. Then said Brother Clapp, here is one that is going it alone. I said to him I thought it would be risky, that it would be necessary that we be tied up very close in order that the enemy did not get in and burst us up and from that expression alone I felt afraid that he would make shipwreck and be lost, but hoped not.

We got along quite well, but had some afflictions. Our little daughter Anna Maria was crippled in one of her legs and one of Brother Johnson's little boys came down with the measles, and one of my drivers (a colored man, a member of the Church which was the property of my second wife—a good and faithful man) while yoking a cow one morning hurt his knee and he became a cripple. So we had two cripples which made it very hard on me but the Lord helped us and we kept along. We had a very good road and before we got to Mount Pisga we passed over some of the most beautiful lovely country we ever saw, beautiful springs and streams of water (Whig Paras) and small groves of timber. Our cripples soon got better of their lameness.

On July 7, 1846, we arrived at Mount Pisga to the camp of Israel and found a good many of the Saints and a meeting in

session. Several of the twelve had come back from the Bluffs the evening before, namely Presidents Brigham Young, Heber C. Kimball, Willard Richards and E. T. Benson. They had just received orders from the government of the United States that the Mormons should send 500 good, efficient men to California to help fight the Mexicans. They were at war with the Mexicans at that time. As we have stated heretofore, the council decided to raise the 500 as called for and that would leave us with a great many teams without drivers and as we had a good many cattle that should be cared for, so they decided to send a letter of instructions to the traveling Saints back and have help come on to us here (where we had a great many wagons and teams and needed much help). The instructions stated that the brethren behind should come and help to locate the camp of Israel that they may prepare for winter and they, the brethren, should take back teams and bring on the poor that we may go together, live or die, and it came to pass that the brethren sat in council and labored almost all night counseling and preparing the letter of instructions to all of the back traveling Saints. The letter of instructions called the gospel to send to the committee left in Nauvoo.

And it came to pass that I Joseph L., was the man that was called upon to take my team and return immediately to Nauvoo and read the letter of instructions to every company of Saints on the road from Nauvoo and deliver the gospel to

the community and also to get the terms the lowest figures that the Demoins millers would let us, the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints have flour for we probably might want to get large quantities from them. Yes, Brother Brigham, says Brother Joseph you have a good team, a nice little wagon a perfect horse. We want you to pitch your tent and unload your little wagon and go with these important documents. He said we must send these 500 men and we must gather out the poor left back; that they are not destroyed. As these 500 men have to leave our camp we must have some help from the brethren back and then we can send teams back and bring their families also. I said to Brother Brigham, I told Brother James Pace that if he would go, he should be a captain. Brother Brigham says I don't know. We have been looking up some for captains but said we will do the best we can for him. On July 8th, it came to pass that I, Joseph started about 12 o'clock this day, 1846, upon my mission east. I took Brother William Snow back as I had to go on a mission and a brother by the name of Parker and made a very good drive. We met several companies and read the letter to them all. All of the brethren sent letters and words to their friends and some sent money by me to get things for them.

The reading of this letter made many joyful and light hearts for they were getting discouraged not knowing where they were going or what would become of them.

On July 13th we arrived in the city of Nauvoo and I left my team with Brother Murray in Black Jack Grove and went to the river, crossed on the ferry about sunset and went to Brother Fulmer's house. He was not at home. I called on Brother Haycock, found him sick and informed him that I had the gospel for him.

The gospel, he said, and sprang up as he was lying upon his casket. Yes, said I. The gospel according to Saint Brigham and maybe it will cure you. What, he says, he received it and read it with great eagerness. Well, said he rejoicing, just in time, said he, us trustees had met today and what to do we did not know, we had come to a full stop and I have just returned home discouraged and had just lain down sick. Now said he, how glad I am, now we will know how to proceed. We are thankful indeed.

On the 14th, in the morning, I found myself once more in the city of Nauvoo with peculiar feelings. I viewed the beautiful temple and a portion of the city contemplating to some extent the past, the present and the future of this beautiful city. It is not now an asylum for the persecuted saints of God, but I could feel in the spirit that their house or place of rest was away in the far west.

This morning, mother Works died at the house of her son-in-law. She was the mother of Brigham Young's first wife, fly



brother Ebenezer Robinson's wife, she was a good old lady, she died and I helped to bury her.

I delivered some letters in the city that I had brought with me and found a large excitement. The mob had taken up their old trade. They had unmercifully whipped several of our brethren while in a field at work and had taken three or four prisoners, and were expecting, as they had threatened to come directly upon the city and drive every last Mormon out of their country, as they termed it.

I met in the evening with the brethren for prayers in the temple, wrote one letter to my brother Ebenezer Robinson who had been sent to Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, by the Prophet Joseph Smith with Sidney Rigdon to print for him and counsel him and was told by the prophet to never leave nor forsake him. I surmised there was something wrong or Joseph would not have sent him away that way and with that man, but Ebenezer thought sure that his character stood clear in the eyes of the prophet. Ebenezer Robinson had edited the Times and Seasons there for several years and had joined the Church in Kirtland and had been through the Missouri wars and he and Don Carlos Smith were appointed to edit a paper for the Church called the Times and Seasons and as Brother Carlos took sick and died, Ebenezer carried on the paper. I knew that Angeline, Ebenezer's wife, had some time before this had watched Brother Joseph the prophet and had seen him go

into some house and that she had reported to Sister Emma, the wife of the prophet. It was at a time when she was very suspicious and jealous of him for fear he would get another wife, for she knew the prophet had a revelation on that subject. She (Emma) was determined he should not get another, if he did she was determined to leave and when she heard this, she, Emma, became very angry and said she would leave and was making preparations to go to her people in the State of New York. It came close to breaking up his family. However, he succeeded in saving her at that time but the prophet felt dreadfully bad over it. He went to my brother's and talked to Angeline on the matter and she would not give him any satisfaction and her husband (Ebenezer) did not reprove his wife, and it came to pass the prophet cursed her severely, but they thought it would not take effect because he, the prophet, was angry supposing the offense was not sufficient to merit so great a curse.

They came to me for advice for they felt considerably bad over it. I told them I would do anything before he (the prophet) should curse me, but I saw they felt quite sanguine, that they were not to blame, but I thought that I would not have a wife of mine do a thing of that kind for a world. If she had done it, she should get upon her knees at his feet and beg his pardon or she should bear her own sins. But suffice it to say, he sent him away with Sidney Rigdon.

I remained several days at Nauvoo but as I was somewhat anxious to get back and finish my mission and as I had no gun with me I concluded it best for me to return back.

On July 18th, 1846, I hitched up and started for the camp of Israel in the west. I stopped at Bonepart and got the miller's terms in writing that he would let the Latter-day Saints have flour or he would have Joseph L. Robinson on his order have flour, what they wanted at \$2.50 for one cwt. [100 lbs.]. I had very good luck, saw Uncle John Young, took some messages from him for Joseph his brother, stayed one night and took breakfast with Bishop Edward Hunter. I arrived to Mount Pisga [or Tisga], Friday 24th. Felt very thankful to God, my Heavenly Father, for his kindness to me, that I had been so wonderfully blessed, that he had been with me and had preserved my family that I see them again alive.

My first wife and child were sick. We anointed and blessed them, the child is better. At this place, old Brother Thayer and wife died and were buried here and Brother Johnson went along with us. While here, I took the shaking ague every other day and was not well. The weather was not good at this place. I told the boys we must hitch up and leave this place. My ague and fever were very severe and it came to pass, on July 28th, we rode out from Pisga, my sick day. We crossed Grand River, I crawled off my wagon and saw, with others, Brother Balding, (whom I had seen at Kirtland at the house of

Oliver Granger's. I had sung in tongues and Brother Balding interpreted it.)

I said to him, I am sick with ague and fever and I want you to lay hands on and heel me. I sat in a chair, he blessed me and sure enough I had no more of that ague. We drove about six miles and camped the next day. We met Brother Thineas Richards. I told him how I had been. He said I should have no more ague and fever, and so it was.

This evening, my oldest son Oliver was taken sick and my wife Maria had chills and fever. On August 2nd, we met Brother E. T. Benson going east on a mission. We found at this place a cold spring and a beautiful stream of water in which I baptized several persons.

We drove past an Indian settlement and found a land of springs. Brother F. J. Johnson's little boy was very sick. We stopped over for the Sabbath.

August 10th, Brother Johnson's little son died and we buried him in the side of a little hill. Our sick are getting some better. Susan did some washing.

August 12th. We past Tea Creek, found some brethren there preparing for winter. We arrived at Council Point on the Missouri River the first time we ever saw her rily face. We found Bishop Jonathan H. Hale and several of the brethren at this point. We turned out and my cattle strayed away. We

hunted several days and found some of them. Others we never found.

August 20th. It came to pass, with my team, I took patriarch Isaac Morley, Bishop Jonathan Hale and Elder Phineas Richards, crossed the river and drove up to the camp of Israel at a place called Cutler's Park. Found them feeling well, organized into divisions, attended a council meeting.

While there, I heard Brother Brigham say that the man possessing property, money who was perfectly willing at any time and at all times to use the same for the building up of the kingdom of God on the earth verily that said property was just as safe in his own hands as in the hands of a bishop. That God did not care just so men did not covet their money, but every man that did covet his money and was not willing that the same should be used for the work of the Lord, that God would certainly dispossess that man of all he had, yea, would strip him naked.

We returned back and it came to pass that beloved Brother Hale took sick and in a very few days he died and we buried him. He was a good, faithful Latter-day Saint. I am a witness that he did thoroughly perform his work and duty well as a bishop while in Nauvoo. It came to pass also his wife took sick and in a few days died also and was buried by the side of her husband, sleeping here together.

September 1846. We gathered up our teams and took along with us a Sister Roylance, her husband had gone with the Mormon Battalion. She had a wagon and one yoke of oxen, a family of small children. We drove down and camped by the river near old Council Point, as the ferry was there.

That night I was awakened with distress feeling very bad. It was with, some difficulty I could get my breath and behold there was a general outcry in the camp. In every wagon there was a disturbance. Some children were crying and several were panting for breath.

We inquired, what is the matter, the answer was we do not know but we feel dreadfully bad. I presently took the matter into consideration. It was plainly manifested to me it's the devil or evil spirits. They are trying to choke us to death. I immediately arose, got out of my wagon and walked out among the wagons feeling very much oppressed and hearing the uproar, knowing it was evil spirits, and in my heart I called upon the Lord and in the name of Jesus himself and in virtue of the holy priesthood which I held, we rebuked those evil spirits and commanded them to depart or leave us to rest in peace, and it was so no quicker said than done. They went directly away and all was quiet in the company. We felt very easy and quiet and could go to sleep. I knew there was power in the priesthood for I had known of devils being cast out before. I felt so comfortable and happy to thank the Lord my

God for this manifestation of his divine power and goodness in delivering us from the powerful grasp of the devil.

We were blessed in crossing the river and getting up to camp, but our little daughter Mary Elizabeth was taken very sick and in spite of all of our efforts to save her, she died in a few days after we arrived in camp.

As I remarked, we were organized into divisions and a foreman for each division and I was appointed a foreman in the fourth division in the camp of Israel on the 13th of September, 1846.

It came to pass that we buried our sweet little daughter in the edge of the little mound near Cutter's Park and there were some ten others buried there. We felt lonesome and to mourn the departure of our dear little daughter, but we felt proud and very thankful that we had entrusted to our care so great a treasure and so pure and precious a daughter of Zion, but we had to part with her.

But our stay in this place was but short, as the summer was passing away and people had to prepare for winter, as it would soon be upon us.

It was deemed wisdom to seek a good winter resort that the brethren could be preparing, to build and gather hay and go to settlements to procure supplies. Accordingly, an exploring committee was appointed. They found a beautiful place near the river about three miles from Cutter's Park, good land, good

water, and plenty of wood handy. We soon repaired to this place, were very much pleased with the location. A few days, yea not many moons, and here was a city. The country was dotted with houses. They rose up like mushrooms. I pitched my tent on the south line of the city. We kept Sister Roylance with us as she had no tent and some of her children were sick. I deemed it wisdom to build her first a house. So, I with my little force, went to with our mights, cut and hauled logs and put her up a little house, built a fireplace and covered it in and moved her into it, and built two rooms for my two families and moved them in out of our tent.

We cut some hay and helped to build a council house and then we put up another room adjoining my house and hired Brother McGuire to teach us school and we soon had it going. The Lord was with us and helped us and we were happy in him. Bishop Edward Hunter built himself a house. He was a near neighbor to me.

This place was named Winter Quarters. This place is situated between old Council Bluffs and Council Point and is located on the west side of the river.

November 16, 1846. And it came to pass that in this city was born to us a daughter, a fine promising child by Susan, my second wife, our first polygamist child. We gave it the name of Susan Asenath. We loved her very much.



December 29, 1846. It came to pass that this city was organized into wards. By appointment Joseph Lee Robinson was bishop of the 7th Ward and I selected for counselors, James Blake and Joseph Matthews. It came to pass we performed our duties and labors to the best of our abilities, having many poor and some sick and several deaths. Among the deaths, was our daughter Susan Asenath. She died March 12th, 1847. Also died, Charity Campbell, whose husband was one of the battalion boys. We buried them in our burying ground. We composed some verses fitted to the occasion, but we do not have a copy to insert here. We only say, let them sleep sweetly. Sleep until the resurrection day.

A pioneer company was organized to go up and search out the land of promise for the Latter-day Saints. As yet, we knew not where we should go, but the prophet Joseph was very anxious to get this people into the Rocky Mountains. He said at one time he wanted temples built all over the Rocky Mountains. George A. Smith (in this last winter, the First Presidency was restored by a clear vote of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints electing Brigham Young president and Heber C. Kimball his first and Willard Richards his second counselors.)

We felt happy and very thankful that we had such good men for our leaders. The presidency deemed it wise to take a good company of pioneers and go and search out the land

and to take a portion that was well prepared with them and leave them to commence operations and hold the fort.

In the fall, a company was organized to go down to St. Joseph, Missouri, to freight up goods, and I sent one wagon and three yoke of good cattle. But through bad management on the trip and bad usage, I lost five head out of six and we sent back to pick the poor. I sent one yoke and surely I never saw them more. I also lost one yoke of burrows before crossing the Missouri River and also lost one cow in the winter which placed) me in a fix so that I was under the necessity of stopping this season at least.

### *March 1847*

While here, I became acquainted with a lady by the name of Laurinda M. Atwood. We formed an attachment and agreed with the consent of my wives to marry. The President being agreeable, we were sealed at the house of E. T. Benson on the 20th of March, 1847 by President Brigham Young. Verily, if I had not been stored with a pretty good portion of faith, I certainly would not dared to have taken so much responsibility. Being driven from my home and exiled in an Indian country not knowing whether we should ever find another home, but trusting in God, the holy spirit saw I should take her that it

should be for the glory of God and also for her good and my good also.

This, may appear strange in this generation. Nevertheless it is verily true for if I had not had taken her, I should have been condemned of God. In taking her into my bosom for a wife I verily know that I was under no condemnation, for after receiving what I had, wrapped in a heavenly vision with the straight and narrow path before my eyes continually and receiving through the holy spirit, revelation from Almighty God on that very important subject, I knew verily the time had come for the humble servant of God to enter into that holy order.

As Jacob was teaching his people in the Book of Mormon, forbidding them to practice the order of plural marriage for he, God, had commanded Lehi that his people should have wives, save one and concubines, they should have none. But, he adds if I will raise up seed unto me I will command my people otherwise you shall abide by these words. Now, it is plain and certain that God had the right to command his people just what he pleased, whatever he commands, that is virtue to obey the same. Now if any man is worshipping a God that cannot tell him what he would have him do today, it is not the God we worship. For we worship the God of Abraham. Notwithstanding, it is written thou shalt not kill. Nevertheless, he commanded Abraham to take his son Isaac up to the mount

and slay him and offer him in sacrifice. Now Abraham went about it and certainly would have done it as he was told if the Lord had not stopped him. That showed to God that Abraham would obey him and it was counted to him for righteousness. Abraham knew that God commanded him to do that thing. Now if Abraham had refused to obey this commandment he never would have been the father of the faithful. Now Jesus came through his loins and all the faithful from Adam down to the last one who will ever be born on this earth of the faithful that will be admitted into the golden city described by John the Revelator, will be adopted into the family of Abraham.

[Editor's note: J.L.R. then continues with a discussion of the prophets from Adam to Abraham and concludes with his testimony by saying]: We do know that God has spoken from the heavens and that he has brought forth the fullness of his everlasting gospel and that it does embrace the doctrine of plural marriage and if that was not included in it would not be the fullness of the gospel.

They wanted me to look after Sister Roylance and family, saying, when Brother Roylance drew wages and sent money, I should receive pay out of the same. I furnished her flour, provisions, and wood out of my own private means, but I did never ask them for a dollar. I could not, for I did consider that these battalion boys were performing one of the most important missions that event was performed for this Church.

Also one of the most hazardous, attended with a great amount of hardship and suffering.

Now to get our bread and many necessaries, we had to go down into Missouri like the children of Israel did for corn, go into Egypt.

Now, many of us had to stay and go to farming in order that we might live and prepare to go on to the promised land. For surely it now has been promised for the Lord had told us by the interpretation of tongues and the spirit of prophecy and we felt it powerfully in the spirit that our God had a choice land in the west for his Saints. We knew verily that ere long the center stake of Zion should be built up by the Latter-day Saints and that an holy temple should be built there in this generation where the God of Israel should show his face to the pure in heart.

So, our faces were sent Zionward. It seemed that we must not be diverted from the great prize that lay before us. Truly we have received an earnest of our inheritance and it is so very rich. Yea we have received the Holy Ghost and it brings to us such a flood of light, intelligence and knowledge. Yea, an assurance so that we are greatly in love for we have found the prize and we are willing to sell all we have for that prize.

And it came to pass that in addition to the building of a large city at Winter Quarters, the Saints built a grist mill so that we could grind our corn and grain without having to grate

it or to boil it, which thing we had done very much to keep from starving to death.

1847. Early in the spring, the First Presidency and a good company of pioneers and families left to search out the place for the Saints to gather into. It came to pass that we that remained behind, went to with our mights in plowing, planting and sowing and fencing and going down into Missouri for supplies.

And it came to pass that I sent our colored man, John, with some feed grain and provisions to raise something for us to come to. He went as a teamster for a brother with the pioneers. And behold the Lord went with them. They arrived in the Great Salt Lake Valley, 1847, on the 24th of July. They were exceedingly happy, planted some seeds and left the brethren and returned to Winter Quarters late in the fall, cheerful and happy and they were happily received by the brethren and sisters and we had a good time through the winter in meetings and dancing and in instructing the commandments. Behold we labored with all our mights to prepare to start in the spring to leave our homes again and continue our journey to the land of peace.

It came to pass that prior to the death of the prophet Joseph, he spoke largely and lengthily upon the situation and upon the importance of this government, the mighty and once happy nation regardless of the situation that the government

is in at the present time. He (the prophet) proposed many important improvements in the management and policy of the rulers and lawmakers, offering himself as a candidate for the presidency of these United States. Not that he desired office, or wished to take so great a responsibility upon himself, but merely to save the nation from ruin and utter destruction and from the vortex of ruin which he prophetically saw the government was rapidly sinking into. Now there is a pamphlet, or book, containing the governmental policies of the nation by Joseph Smith, Jr.

It came to pass there were many elders called as missionaries to go into the United States to preach the gospel but also, in particular, to electioneer for the prophet Joseph Smith for president. A good portion of the Twelve and many others were gone already. I, Joseph Lee, was called to go into the state of New York and I was making preparations, expecting to start in two or three days, but as I attended meeting on the Sabbath, expecting to start the next Tuesday or Wednesday upon my mission, the prophet, or patriarch Hyrum Smith, came upon the stand and said, he did not want any more elders to go out upon this electioneering mission, as there was a storm brewing and he wanted all that was here to stay at home.

This, to me, was enough. I stopped at home. There were two brethren that I knew of who went to Brother Hyrum and begged to go as they were preparing to take their wives with

them back to the state of New York and they were anxious to go. He told them to go if they wanted to, so they went but never came back again.

[Editor's note: Although this section of J.L.R.'s journal is in proper page sequence, obviously, this is earlier material of Nauvoo days which he is inserting in this place in his journal. It may, possibly, have been already covered in other sections of the journal, yet we feel to repeat it or at least insert it here.]

It came to pass that Satan became very angry and stirred up the wicked rulers and they became mad, also saying if we let this fellow (Joseph Smith, Jr.) alone he will surely take away our place and nation. We must dispose of him in some way. So they go up persecutions and sent officers to Nauvoo that the prophet might be stopped. But he had crossed the river into Mount Rose, feeling very anxious to get his people into the Rocky Mountains, but his wife Emma revolted, saying she would not leave Nauvoo. She thought she had suffered enough. She wanted him to come back and give himself up and some of the very pious brethren went over and carried Emma's message. They begged him to come back and give himself up, saying they didn't think it looked very well for him to run away and leave the people to perish as they would fall upon the people if they could not get him. So, he turned back and called the Legion and addressed them at length. He spoke with a great deal of power saying this Legion was his



boys and that it should exist and these should be his boys forever and ever. He asked us if we would die for him and after receiving an answer yes, he then said he would die for us. He then unsheathed his sword and raised it high and with a voice like thunder, he said, if our enemies, at this time shed one drop of innocent blood this sword shall never be sheathed until victory was won in behalf of the Saints. Said he, we will fight them with thunderings and lightnings, hailstones with whirlwinds and devouring flame until they are wasted and are no more.

He went with them to Carthage to be killed. He said I go as a lamb to the slaughter, if I die, he said, I die innocent. I have a conscience void of offense toward God and all men.

He was murdered in cold blood by a ruthless mob directed by the devil (we should have said when he returned to Nauvoo he said if my life is not worth anything to this people, it is not worth anything to me, I die willingly.)

[Editor's note: We continue J.L.R.'s journal from Winter Quarters.]

It came to pass that we prepared for a start with best outfit we could gather with the means we had at hand. We got provisions and clothing and seeds to go to the Valley of the Great Salt Lake, away in the Rocky Mountains where the Lord said, Stop ye, my Saints, and till the soil and in my name build to me a city and through yourselves habitations to dwell

in and serve me the Lord, your God, and I the Lord will bless and multiply you abundantly.

The prophet Brigham said, We have found a land that will do for the Mormons. It came to pass that after losing so many cattle and some horses, I barely could muster teams enough to start three wagons by hitching up our yoking cows, one wagon for each wife and family.

In this spring we again left our homes in the city of Winter Quarters. We are organized in Amasy Lymon's company, we set out and traveled west upon the Mormon trail. We were divinely inspired to go ahead in the name of the Lord. We had faith in God and great love for his cause and people. We have an assurance, yea, we knew that God was with his people, therefore, we had great joy, and in rejoicing with all our sorrows and tribulations, for surely our tribulations were great and many. But, nothing daunted nor discouraged us, we never looked back nor repented that we had taken upon us the name of Jesus Christ which the world called Mormonism.

Now, before we get far along from Winter Quarters, it might be proper to say a few words upon the subject of plural marriage and some of its effects upon our wives and sisters. Now with the selfishness and traditions that they possessed and had received, it could not be expected that they could enter into this new order of things without difficulty and some severe trial. Polygamy is calculated in its very nature to severely

try the women, even to nearly tear their heart strings out of them. Also, it must severely try the men as well. Surely, a man needs to possess an abundance of grace, wisdom and patience to manage several women as wives and treat them with equality or in a way that he may stand justified before the law. Now the Lord has not given any law nor set any precedent saying how we should manage, but has left it all together to ourselves. Only, he has told us that if we lacked wisdom, we might ask God and that he would give liberally and upbraid not and that we would have a right to the Holy Ghost and that should act as an interpreter and revelator and a man should never get a plural wife unless he gets her by the Holy Ghost, or he should know the will of the Lord or else he should better never marry if he cannot get the mind of the Lord. This is what I have done in every instance so that I did know that it was the will of the Lord that I should take her to wife. Therefore, I have truly had great joy and satisfaction, more or less with every wife, mixed with cares and difficulties and severe trials, but can truly say I never looked back and never but have always felt glad and very thankful to God my Heavenly Father for every wife and for every child, for every brother and for every sister and for every blessing. But, find myself very weak indeed, have done many wrong things which have caused me much sorrow and very bitter repentance, but the Lord, for Christ's sake, has forgiven me all of my sins

and blotted them from the book of his remembrance so that my garments and character are spotless clean and white before the Lord as he has shown unto me which fact has only created in my bosom joy, unspeakable and full of glory, so that, as Paul said, I do rejoice in tribulations knowing that tribulations worketh patience, and patience, experience, and experience, hope and hope maketh not ashamed for the love of God is shed abroad in the land by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.

Now we must say something for the sisters. There was a subject got up among the sisters while in Winter Quarters which created a considerable anxiety with some of the first wives. The saying was this, that the first born son in the priesthood would take the birthright. Sister Benson, Apostle E. T. Benson's first wife, felt sorry over that for fear some of his plural wives would produce the curtain over her children and my first wife, Maria, I think took it to heart some I think but she went immediately to the Lord and sought an answer. She made it a subject of humble and fervent prayer. She got an answer which was that no woman should produce me a son until after she had. Although she was the mother of four sons and two of them were living, but I had two wives younger than her and one had had one child and it was a daughter. They both provided a child each before her next was born but they proved to be daughters and not long after theirs were

born, she had a son born, which proved her to have some of the faith of Abraham, I think it rather Sarah for faith. At any rate, it proved hers to be a child or son of promise. It was with her, as I suppose, as it is with thousands of others. She loved her husband dearly.

When in Nauvoo the subject or doctrine of plurality was first mentioned, she felt very much tried over it. She thought she could not stand it. She could not certainly live and have her husband have more wives. But the Lord was very merciful to her insomuch that he gave her a heavenly vision. They took her into another world. She said she knew it was not in this world. She passed along beautiful streets and came to a beautiful mansion. She was politely invited to walk in. She did so. Everything was clean, sweet and tidy with beautiful furniture, well adorned, lovely in the extreme. She saw a group of women. They were the mistresses of the house, the wives of one man. They were happy there. There was the strictest) order and decorum, not an unpleasant look nor an unbecoming word was spoken. Everything be spoke perfect happiness and satisfaction. She said the situation seemed almost or positively envious. They were so exceedingly happy.

This dream, or vision, did for her what was intended. She was converted. She never fought it any more. She knew from that it was a pure and heaven-born principle.

Soon after she had this vision, she said to me in a meek and candid look, Joseph, when you get another wife, I wish you would get my sister Philana. I was surprised at such an expression, but said why her instead of someone else? Because, said she, I think that I could get along better with a sister than I could with a stranger.

I knew not what had caused such a change in her neither did I never know until after I got another wife. After that she told me what she had seen. But suffice it to say, she gave her consent to every wife that I received after that while she lived and I do affirm that she is a wonderful woman. She behaved remarkably, so much so that I shall be in favor of her having a kingdom and retaining her position as first wife.

Now, seeing that I have gone way back to Nauvoo and have had time to consider after mature reflection and serious consideration upon the matter of loss and sacrifice of time and property in the matter of leaving my home, my lands and possessions in that beautiful city and country of Nauvoo, with a good lot and a young and thrifty orchard, a good brick house, with five rooms and two good farms in the season and my interest in a beautiful temple which I labored hard to help build, although that is church property, but if we could have remained upon our land and possessions, I could have enjoyed it in common with my brethren.

Now the question is, why did you leave your temple, your city, your houses, lands and possessions? The answer is ready and conclusive. Because we were obliged to. The voice of the people through a community to our leading men said you Mormons must and shall leave the state. Now, the question is will you go peaceably, if so how much time do you require? The question was discussed between them and the question was put to the people of the Saints. We all agreed to leave in the coming spring. This took place in the fall of 1845. This finally was the bargain and community did agree that inasmuch as the Saints were making all possible haste and showed by our word and movement that we meant it, that most should be let alone by the mob. We knew too well it would not do for us to contend with them and the spirit moved upon the people, the Gentiles, to give us a chance to go and upon the Saints to strain every nerve to go.

Now, we will show you that they were in earnest for the mob raised an army with cannon and came into the city of Nauvoo and did fight a few, a very few of the poor Saints that had not got out and they had to hustle as many were sick and many died through exposure.

Now, I propose that we estimate the value of my property and damage over and above what I received putting it at a low cash value. \$1,000 for house and lot, \$1,000 for land or farms in Paras [or Laras] and \$1,000 for wasted time for two

years before we found a resting place. This I do charge up to the people of the state of Illinois with 10% interest until paid. I shall hold the government and people of the United States for security and responsibility until it is paid, for the reason they did not do their duty in looking after their own number of the great family of states. And I do solemnly affirm that I do consider it a low and just estimate and charge and I charge it up in the name of the Lord, expecting pay some day.

Now while we are writing some items of Nauvoo times, it might be interesting to relate some remarkable dreams that I, J.L. Robinson, had in the early days of Nauvoo. James Blakesley was a very smart, fluent teacher. He is the man who first ordained me an elder. Now, James Blakesley had done a large amount of preaching in the state of New York where I first became acquainted with him. He had built up several branches and baptized a great many converts and had gotten himself very deeply rooted in my confidence and good feelings. He had come into Nauvoo but was not taken very much notice of by the authorities and was not boosted up high it appears. He was very much tried and when the big apostasy came about, he went with them. But before this took place or I knew that he was disaffected, I had a night vision. I found myself some three or four miles down the river from Nauvoo where there were two log houses, cornered close together. I had been conversing with the man of the house



when, looking up, here comes James Blakesley upon a horse. I recognized him at once but oh what a feeling came over me when I gazed upon him frothing at the mouth with a dusty, tattered hat on and his coat vest and pants, shoes, every vestige of his clothing from head to foot was rusty, ragged and tattered. The situation he was in and the feelings I had foreshadowed misery and death for that man. I felt sorry for him. Not long after this he went to preaching for the apostate Law party and went away with them and I have never seen nor heard from him since.

Another dream I had which, if possible, made a deeper or more serious impression upon me and my mind. I saw in this Church of Jesus Christ there was a very strict law passed and that a transgression of that law meant death was the penalty. To my astonishment, my youngest, my own dear brother, Ebenezer Robinson, had received a trial by the Church and judged guilty and sentenced to die. What astonished me still more was that I was the man to execute the sentence. Surely a very trying crisis had arrived. Now according to my principle and grid, there was but one course for me to pursue which was always to obey orders. I had no scruples with regard to the sentence or justice of the execution and I knew that it was required at my hand to perform the execution. Said I in my reflections, he is a smarter man than I am. He is capable of doing more good than I possibly can and if it would be

accepted, I would rather die instead of him. But, the thought came again, you are innocent, he is guilty, it would not pay the debt, he must die.

In the vision, he went with me, we passed up Parley Street to arise up on the bench passed through a field to the right to a wood on Hibbard's farm, a secret, low place. Well, something whispered, this is a suitable place. I turned facing him and drew a pistol from my bosom and took aim at his breast and I saw the fire and the blood it coming from his breast, he fell.

He was at that time the editor of the Times and Seasons for the Church. He was considered a good, substantial member, a good Latter-day Saint. He was five years younger than myself. I always considered him a good, honest boy of good moral principle and good character, religiously inclined. I never saw but one thing against him when a boy. I shall always remember when he was a small boy, he said to me, Joseph, I think I will become a missionary and go and preach to the heathen. Said he, there is money in it. I shook my head, was concerned.

This vision was given before missionary work was introduced into Nauvoo and I had ever heard of priesthood or endowments. I had no idea there was any more than the first principles of the gospel to ever be revealed to the Saints. I wondered and felt very bad for my brother. He came to my house on a visit a while after this dream. He was pacing the floor, feeling very

merry. Said I to him, Ebenezer, I have had a dream of late which makes me feel very bad. Said he, who was it about, was it about me? Said I, about a near friend. Said he, if it is about me, he slapped his hands upon his thigh exclaiming, I will go it straight through. I thought of Peter boasting, saying, Though all men deny you, yet will not I. This made me feel still worse.

Let us now return to our traveling camp west of the Missouri River. As we had set sail from Winter Quarters, we traveled on very slowly but moving westward toward the promised land. Had some hinderment in crossing the River and passing through some Indian towns and loop fork of the Platt River and other streams.

### *July 1848*

On Beaver Creek, my third wife, Laurinda, was delivered of a child, a fine daughter, we named her Jane. She, Jane Geneva, was born the 14th of July, 1848. The mother and child are doing well, but the mother had to suffer a good deal as the child was born in the morning and the camp moved on the same day. But we blessed her and the Lord blessed her and she was strengthened so that the camp was not hindered.

We very soon got into the buffalo country when we obtained a plenty of meat which was certainly a great blessing to us.

Now we are traveling into the wilderness. Now the Lord is not feeding us as manna from heaven direct. He did this with the children of Israel, but he is feeding us upon substantial food nevertheless, just as good if not better and we can discern his hand and his marvelous power in protecting and in feeding this people and in leading them to a land of peace which our God has certainly prepared and was holding in reserve for his beloved Saints where He purposeth to feed and to nourish them and train and discipline them and bring them under the eye of the wicked and into the bond of the covenant. When 40 years expire, or soon after the expiration of 40 years, he shall bring about the redemption of Zion and while that is being accomplished a still greater manifestation of the power of God will be manifest in the great destruction of the wicked and in the building of a holy temple upon the consecrated spot in Jackson County, Missouri and then the work of the Father will commence among all nations to gather them to the land of their fathers, even to Zion and Jerusalem and then shall greater miracles be wrought, yes far greater than were wrought by the prophets in leading the children of Israel out of Egypt into the promised land. By that time the Latter-day Saints will have a large experience and will possess great faith and will possess mighty power, then great and mighty miracles shall be performed and God shall get to himself a great name and very much honor. Now the little

stone, very small at the beginning, and the faith of the Saints was weak and many, very many, have fallen away because of the power of the devil and the wickedness of the world and the littleness of their faith. Yet, for all that there has been a constant addition to the little stone as all that are born Saints and all that are baptized are joining on, which is enlarging the kingdom and it shall never cease growing until it shall become a great mountain and fill the whole earth. And it shall become so large that it shall grind every other kingdom to powder and the dust shall be blown away and there shall be nothing left to show where they stood, amen.

Now we are traveling along the same, singing, prophesying, and praying and rejoicing because God is certainly with His Saints. They shall rejoice and it came to pass, we passed through Laramie and the Black Hills and the Sweet Water and we found the devil's gate and an abundance of (sateratus) and many of our cattle got afflicted and died. We had to use a great deal of precaution to save enough to get through to the valley. I lost several, being alkalied and one by wolves, but still we traveled along.

We passed over Green River. Here a few of us stopped and went up the river on a hunt and killed some elk and antelope. We saw some of the Lamanite hunters. They looked rather sour but did not molest us. They might have used us up. They rode all around us and looked to see and learn our strength,

but the Lord preserved us. We returned to camp and found all right, only one of my cows was killed by wolves. We traveled along very finely, crossed several fine streams, passed Fort Bear River and Weber, through Echo and a very diverting and curious canyon and up Canyon Creek and up and down and over the mountains. Surely it was rough and tumble, but through the blessing of God we reached the height of the last mountain before dropping into the great Salt Lake Valley which was destined to become the center stake of Zion in the midst of the Rocky Mountains.

·1848-1850·

## **Salt Lake Valley**

Starting out in North Cottonwood, Utah (Farmington)

Justice of the Peace · Bishop

We halted and gazed with much wonder and admiration and with tears and much joy. There was an emotion of feeling in our bosoms that we cannot describe. Suffice it to say that the valley looked very good to us then. We descended and entered the valley the first of October 1848. I drove into the fort. The brethren had built a fort that they might protect themselves.

The next day I went south six or eight miles to see some corn that John our colored man had raised, as he had raised some crop for us so that with what we had brought, we were obliged to make it do us until we could raise something the next season.

The next day we took a brief trip north some six or eight miles to see the country. We saw the President and told him where I had been and what I thought for the present if it should meet with his approbation. He said all right go ahead. So consequently, on Saturday we drove up to the mouth of North Canyon and camped for the winter.

Sunday, with a part of our family, we attended meeting at the fort and on Monday we took our teams and went and gathered our corn to secure for as we discovered there had been but little raised in the valley and it stood us in hand to save what we had that we might not starve to death.

On October 5th, 1848, Susan my second wife was delivered of her second daughter. A promising child. We held the same with joy, very glad we now had found a resting place for the mother and child who are doing well. In this month we got out timber and built our house and we entered into it with some satisfaction for the canyon winds came down nice with a cold whine which made it very disagreeable for those that had to sleep out in their wagons causing them to suffer exceedingly. But soon in the winter, we built more log cabins

which made it more comfortable for us. This proved to be a rather hard winter. We lost two cows. Still we live and rejoice in the Holy One of Israel believing he will sustain us and never suffer us to perish while we still trust in Him and keep His commandments.

### *February 1849*

On February 2nd, 1849, this day Maria, my first wife was delivered of a son weighed 10 lbs., a fine promising child, as well a child of promise. Joseph Elijah his name.

On the 1st of March we went to Salt Lake and had a good chat with President Young. With other questions I asked him where I should farm, or locate. He told me that my name was down for a bishop in the city but that they could put another in my place and that I should go north that I could do as much good there as here and better for myself and that they wanted a bishop there.

In this month there was an election held in the fort and I was elected to the office of Justice of the Peace and at the same appointed bishop over and unto the North Cottonwood Ward and precinct and on the 24th of March was ordained a bishop under the hands of C. C. Rich and E. Snow, two of the twelve and set apart to preside over the North Cottonwood Ward so that I received two important offices at that time. I



received it as a mission and went and soon entered my field of labor as a missionary but felt my incompetency for such a task and felt my weakness very much and did call upon the Lord to strengthen me and give me wisdom and grace according to my day.

We moved up to Cottonwood and commenced to put in some crops. We moved two rooms and set to with our might but behold our own strength was small and our weakness was for the want of food. For it came to pass that early in the winter I went around to see if I could get or buy anything in the shape of edibles and behold I could not find any encouragement where I could get one pound of anything and I came home and examined and made an estimate of what we had on hand counting in bran and all. I saw we would have to come right down to half rations or else would have to go through this three or four months without bread. And behold I said to my family, now said I, if we keep on eating all we want as we have been doing—we will have to go without bread some three or four months. But if we put ourselves on half a pound a day we will have bread until harvest, that is if we get a harvest now. Said I to them, what shall we do? Said they, we have some bread all the while. So said I we must ration. And it came to pass that we commenced from that time and we weighed out our rations. I got my half pound and barely for the first day or two I thought it would most certainly kill me, for I went in

the canyon, worked hard but felt very hungry and weak and after a few days I did not feel it so much.

Now the crickets had been very destructive on their crops this last season and our brethren put in crops and the crickets came down and devoured them. I will here relate an incident, a very remarkable one which was told me by John S., brother of George A. Smith. He with others put in crops south of the city. They came up and the large crickets came down and were determined to devour them. They fought the crickets all day and would have to lay down at nights and then they would rise in the morning and fight them until they were so exhausted that they would not stand. But as soon as they were rested they would go at them again with all vengeance. But as they had nothing to eat and not much but roots and herbs they had not much strength. But the thought that if this crop was eaten up they would certainly have to starve to death, they hung on like bull dogs. He said they came into their tent one night and were clean discouraged. They gave out entirely, saying they could do no more. They then told the Lord, give us help or we will perish. And it came to pass that the Lord did help them for he sent an army of cannibals called sea gulls. They came as if inspired. They came that afternoon and they fell upon them and devoured them by the millions and soon as their stomachs were full they would go and spew them up and then go at them again and so on until they cleaned them

out. They raised a very good crop. Now was this the hand of God? I say yes verily it truly was as great a miracle as the manna and the quail story whereby the Lord fed the children of Israel in the days of Moses while in the wilderness.

Now notwithstanding there was considerable crop raised. There was a great many people and many of the battalion boys had come in from California. They had to be fed and consequently, there appeared to be nothing I could get so it seemed to be our only chance to make what we had do us until a harvest.

Now we had faith that our God would feed us in some miraculous way, either with angel's food in raining down from heaven or in bringing it up from the earth the natural way. Now we had more faith that he would do it the natural way and we show that by our works in that we saved or lay up seeds and when seed time comes we get up in the morning and we labor diligently and prepare a piece of ground and plant our seeds and we watch that piece of ground with a great deal of anxiety and care and we expect to see the little shoots spring out of the ground and then we will do our best to guard it from the destruction of the devourer and if it needs water to irrigate it believing that it will mature and that we can gather to eat it to prolong our mortal existence.

Now this is the only way that we know of to feed mortals on this earth. But we read of mortals being fed by a shorter

cut or by a very different process in several instances. We will now mention a few. The children of Israel were fed with angel's food which came upon the ground every morning except on Sabbath morning. The people would gather it up every morning and live upon it for 40 years. In one instance the Lord caused an east wind to blow quails and they dropped down for them and they ate flesh to their full. Now this with God was no more of a miracle than causing it to grow what we call the natural way and then before Christ, the prophet Elisha caused the oil to multiply that they filled many vessels that she could pay off her debt and that her family could live off of the remainder. In another instance the barrel of meat was kept so full until the famine was past,

Our Saviour has shown us that there is an easier way or shorter cut to feed the people and that is the natural or proper way. In the elements, as God has prepared them, there is an abundance of everything that we can possibly imagine for man for food, for clothing, for drink, for flowers, for our moments of every variety for the use and benefit and for his satisfaction. Now verily I say that every man that keeps a law that will entitle him to receive a fullness of the holy priesthood and celestial glory shall be in possession of eternal riches. That will be a thing that thieves cannot steal from him for he will be in possession of knowledge and power to organize and bring from the elements in abundance of everything that he needs

without corroding soil labor and sweating himself so he is so tried and weary that he cannot rest. Now verily I say that this natural way that we have been speaking of is to obtain our bread together with the weeds, briars, and thorns and frost and every other considerable thing by which our crops are from time to time destroyed. It is a curse placed upon man because of transgression. It is because man transgressed and broke the divine law of God, his creator. Now this is the reason that we have to labor so hard and wait so long to get our bread and necessities of life. It is because of this transgression of man that the devil with his angels are let loose on this earth to tempt, afflict, worry and torment mankind until the human family has had an opportunity to receive the gospel again, an experience which shall be necessary until the seventh thousand year ushers in the order of things and when Christ comes to reign there will not be any contention, no want for our graineries shall be full affording all manner of store and our streets shall be full of innocent boys and girls playing, yea happy shall be the people.

It came to pass that I did get about one bushel of potatoes to plant and saved one bushel of wheat to sow. I sowed it on one acre of ground and the crickets came upon it and seemed determined to eat it up, but we fought day after day and tramped the wheat and whipped it all to pieces but it grew for all that and made us about 20 bushels. With my potatoes

I cut each eye by itself and put one eye in a hill and ate the heart and as soon as the young potatoes were the size of a bird egg our women began to grabble them and they continued this till harvest. When we came to harvest them I was greatly astonished at the quantity left there. Three of us were digging them and one day the boy stopped behind. I looked back and saw him working away. I said what are you doing there? Are you going to dig all day on one hill? Yes sir, said he, if they will keep coming out like this one is he says come here and see what a pile out of one hill, all of these from one hill, yes sir. Let us measure them—one twelve quart wooden bucket rounding full and the same bucket most level full from one hill the largest yield I ever saw all from one small eye in a hill. We thanked God and laughed with joy.

Now, prior to this, after we had fairly gotten up there we called a meeting of the people for it was a nice inviting country and a good many had come upon the lands. We talked to them some, inquiring if they were able and agreeable that I should be their president and bishop and that I should select two of their members and set them apart as my counselors and would they uphold us by their prayers and faith. I wished them to make it manifest by the show of the right hand and there was a clear vote, yes. Then I proceeded and called Daniel A. Miller and John Harris and set them apart as my counselors. This was in April, 1849, and we proceeded immediately to appoint

a meeting and to look after the interests of our ward and people. Our ward was bounded at that time north of Cherry's settlement and south of Weber River, a very large ward, but a few people. Suffice it to say, we met together often and preached and prayed and sang songs and sometimes, spoke in tongues. We were counseled to be rebaptized as we had been a long time traveling and all that wished to be Saints they should make it manifest. Consequently, there was a number baptized on the first of July, 1849 by John Harris, Joseph L. Robinson, Susan and Laurinda M., two of his wives, Daniel A. Miller, Hannah Miller, and Jacob, Lovica, James S., Susanna, Millers, and John and Olive Garner, Seth Dustin, Susanna Harris, William Harmison, all of which were confirmed by Joseph L. Robinson and Daniel A. Miller. Also on September 9th, 1849, there were baptized by Joseph L. Robinson, Maria Robinson, Oliver Lee, Ebenezer J., Anna Maria, Robinsons, William P. and Sidney R. Burton, Elizabeth, David and Alma Hess, and Clarica Jane Miller all of which were confirmed by Daniel A. Miller and John Harris. Also on September 9th were baptized by Daniel A. Miller, Benjamin and Rosanna Matilda Cross, Joel Ricks, Eleanor, Louis, and Sally Ann Ricks and Amanda Tomkins—all confirmed by Joseph L. Robinson and John Harris.

Now about our half rations. It kept us alive and as I told the women we would have bread till harvest and so it was.

But we termed it the first famine that we ever passed through. Surely: a little piece of johnny cake was the sweetest cake that I ever tasted, but the Lord blessed it the little portion that we had, and we didn't go without bread so that we felt to thank the Lord our Heavenly Father and we did not trust Him in vain.

In the summer, we moved Maria from the mouth of the canyon and put up her house. Now the immigrants were passing through to California for gold. They brought us many good and useful things. Yea, we got from them some provisions and a great deal of clothing, tools, good horses, foot sore and poor, cattle and wagons and we traded them provisions and recruited animals. Now some of our battalion boys found gold in California and that excited a great many of our Gentile friends in the eastern states. For they worshipped gold. So they took the gold fever and they would load up heavy with everything that we needed and by the time they got here their teams were given out, so we could see the hand of the Lord to bless his poor afflicted Saints and could but acknowledge His hand in this great blessing. I not only got some good horses and cattle and wagons from them, but some money also for they often get in a quarrel and then they must have a lawsuit as they would get near our place, there being good feed for their animals and they would come to the Justice of the Peace and he would judge their difficulties and have a little of their



money and some of the brethren would have difficulties and want a lawsuit and as we, the bishop, and the bishop's court in Nauvoo and in Winter Quarters, had attended and set on a great many cases of differences and difficulties and inasmuch as we had not only been servants, but slaves to the people and had never received anything from them, we thought that as they would quarrel about property matters that it would be just that they should give us something for our time. But in looking after the poor or in encouraging fellowshipping among Church members, these were a part of our regular church service duties.

There were some law cases that came from Ogden City that we had to hear and pass judgement upon their disputes, but as a rule our people were very good Latter-day Saints and were quite attentive to their duties.

It came to pass that our pioneers first set their eye and foot upon the valley of the great Salt Lake. It was July 24, 1847 and this day of all others will ever be remembered and celebrated by the Latter-day Saints. When the 24th of July came we certainly did celebrate it to the best of our abilities. We met at Salt Lake City, a committee was appointed, they got up a program for the day. We had a splendid dinner, a public picnic, music and marching. Every bishop was to carry his own banner with his own motto in large plain letters painted. I had on my flag a large beautiful eagle and my motto was

Truth Before Gold, thinking this to be a very fitting motto in this gold excitement. We enjoyed ourselves very much and we felt that the Lord was still pleased also.

Now we went through the summer the best we could but in the fall we talked of building a school house that we might have a house to meet in and that we might get our children to school. We appointed a time for a school meeting and met but could not agree and then another, and we did not quite agree this time. I then appointed a third and I had faith and felt determined that we would get the house and that every man should be enlisted in enterprise as I saw how it could be done and then made the proposition where it should stand and how we should build it. This plan was accepted. We were all agreed and we then entered into agreement that a group of men should start with me on Monday morning to cut and hew timbers for a block house on Wills Bottoms, being prepared to stop until the timbers were all cut and on Tuesday morning the teams should come and stick to until it was all hauled and then we should put it up in quick time. It came to pass, when the next Saturday came it found us with a good and good sized block house with "punchen" floor and rough and dirt on it, clinked and dobed all over and all done ready for use. Behold, Christmas was right upon our heels and we held our Christmas picnic dance. We had a jolly Christmas in that house and hired Brother Green, a good school teacher, he taught two

months of school and he said that school had made as great an advance as he ever knew a three month old school to make. And behold ye, we had a good meetinghouse as well.

It came to pass that the word of the Lord came to Jedediah Grant and others through the prophet Brigham, or in other words as some would term it, counseling to go to the states upon important missions. This was late in the fall and I had a very excellent, favorite horse I could have taken over \$200 for him from the immigrants. I would not let them have him but "Jeddy" wanted him and Brother Bolton was called to go to France on a mission. He had a horse, if he could sell him he could go. His horse was worth about one-fourth as much as my horse. I saw by letting my favorite horse go I could send him and Jedediah Grant on their missions. I could not withhold. I said Brother Grant you must have my horse. Said he how much, \$100? I said what he was worth in ordinary times. He said God bless you Brother Robinson, I can give you \$75 now. He gave me the money and my brother George will give you \$25 in a few days and it came to pass I went directly to Brother Bolton and asked him what do you want for your horse. \$75 and then he could go. I gave him the money and took his horse. God bless you Brother Robinson said he and it came to pass the next morning I met Brother Brigham Young. I told him that I had let Brother Jeddy have my horse. What did you ask him, Brigham asked. \$100 said I, what he was

worth in ordinary times, said he. Yes sir, said that is all. That is right, said he, God bless you Brother Joseph and you shall be blessed. So you see I got three blessings for one horse and surely did get them.

It came to pass the next season the gold immigrants came along thicker and more of them and they brought to me two (too) very fine horses, yea the Lord gave me three. Although I paid the parties all they asked for them, but they proved to worth over a \$1,000 more than they cost me.

·1850–1853·

## **Mission to Southern Utah**

Helping establish Parowan, Utah

Visiting the southern settlements with Brigham Young

### *Spring 1850*

Now in the spring of 1850, I hired a good teacher, a young lady and she taught an excellent school through the summer season. Through the blessings of God we raised very good crops and took cows from some of the brethren in the city on shares so that our women made an abundance of butter

and cheese and behold we had plenty to eat and we were in prosperous circumstances. We tried to do our duties temporally and spiritually the best we could and the Lord helped us so much we got a good carriage and a new wagon, or wagons, and cattle and horses. But the Lord saw that we were a going to get rich, and He, well knowing the dangers of wealth in this wicked world saw proper to call me on a mission. From the fall of 1850 to Little Salt Lake Valley about 200 or 300 miles south. The President felt very anxious to extend our settlements south. He called upon George A. Smith to raise 100 men and proceed immediately to Little Salt Lake Valley and form a colony, to go to farming and hold the place until the immigration should come sufficiently strong to relieve us.

Brother Brigham told me if I would go and help Brother George to start a settlement there, then I could, stay there or come back or go where I had a mind to. As he wanted to start the manufacturing of iron as soon as he could, as there was an abundance of very rich iron out there, soon after he received this call, Brother George saw me. He says, Brother Joseph, would you like to take a little trip with me down south? Then he kept letting out a little by little until I received the whole story. That was, I am called to select 100 men and start forth on a mission to Little Salt Lake Valley and start a colony, as we have remarked. But, said he to the President, I am no farmer, and not much experience in business matters.

But said he, if you will allow me to select 15 or 20 men that I can depend upon that are businessmen and farmers, then, said he, I will enter upon my mission at once. Now, said he, I suppose you would not allow me to take a bishop or anyone in authority. Yes, said Brigham, take any man you want but bring their names to me and if they can be spared, unless I have some particular use for him, you shall take him.

(Brother George A. Smith then said) now you are about the third man that I have spoken to. Now Brother Robinson, I would really like to have you go with us, now what say you. Yes, certainly, said I. If the Lord is willing I certainly should be. I will go and do the best that I can with all my heart. Now what shall I take. Well, said he, take provisions, see farming utensils and tools whatever you can and probably you had better take some family. And, said he, we should get started as soon as we can. It is a way in November now.

And it came to pass that I set about getting ready to start upon our mission. My family was agreeable. Susan said she would go with me and she seemed to be the most suitable one for the mission. Laurinda had a young child, a son who was born August 6, 1850 and his name was Nathan and she had no children to help me, and Susan had (children old enough to help me). Maria's boys I wanted to stay and carry on the farm. So we fitted up the big wagon and loaded it down and I

moved Laurinda to the city as she had friends there to remain with while I was absent.

It came to pass that I packed four bushels of potatoes in my carriage with bran and shorts and put a small stove in it. Also, we made our bed on the potatoes and took my family in the carriage and hitched on three or four yoke of oxen and cows on the big wagon and while in the city I blessed my youngest son Nathan and added Benjamin, calling him Nathan Benjamin and drove to Kefs Mills and loaded in our flour and stayed the first night with Brother Joseph Matthew.

On December 10, 1850 we set sail upon our mission with hearts full of gratitude to the Lord that he had brought us to so good and healthy a land and that he counted us worthy to go on a mission in the interest of his kingdom. For the Lord had said unto me that inasmuch as I would do what I could in the times of my poverty for the building up of the kingdom of God on the earth, the time should come when I should become rich so that I am looking forward with hope to a recompense of reward.

It came to pass that in ascending a long and heavy hill on the divide between Salt Lake and Utah valleys our cattle refused to pull their load. As John, our colored man, was singing away with all diligence, for he was a good Saint, and the little boys helping him (for Susan was a widow with two little boys when I married her) and I came down to him, I saw

the situation and told John to unhook the wagon and relieve them and then come back and hitch them again and I would bring my \$1000 horses hitch on and they must pull it. And the Lord helped us and they pushed it up. We thank the Lord and we drove to Lehi and camped. George A. and most of the company was ahead of us. We passed through American Fork and Battle Creek, very few houses in those places. Provo, a small town. Springville, a small but a very pretty town and then to Payson. Here we had some considerable difficulty getting through the mire but succeeded in reaching this fine city. Here we found two families, Brother James Rice and Elias Gardner, two log cabins is all there was in this town and it was the settlement, the last settlement, or house we saw going south until we built them in Little Salt Lake Valley which we called Parowan.

It came to pass we now began to realize our situation just in the commencement of winter, leaving our homes in civilization and trusting in the Lord and what we had ahead of us.

And it came to pass that before we left our homes, I saw President Brigham Young and he asked me if I was going with Brother George A. to the south. I said, yes sir if you say so. And he said yes. I am glad for I feel very anxious about that mission. He said we want to extend our settlements south for good reasons, I said to him, Brother George says that he thinks I had better make my calculations to stop down there



and make my home, he says he thinks maybe he will also. Brother Brigham said to me, Joseph you go and make you a place there and perform your mission and when that is done, said he, you can do or go where you like. You can stop there, or sell or rent your place there or come back here or go where you please. So I thanked him kindly and told him I would go and do the best I could.

We will now return to Payson. Here we found George A. and the company. We set sail with quite a formidable company for behold, he had raised his 100 men, several from my ward, namely Daniel A. Miller, Thomas S. Smith, James Harmison, Ezra T. Clark went and some others were called but did not respond.

Passing over the summit we camped at a place I named Willow Springs and it retained that name. We camped one night on Salt Creek, it was a bitter cold night and I was afraid my potatoes would freeze. But we kept fires going and having blankets around them to save them, if possible. We passed Chicken Creek and found the Sevier River here. It was bleak and cold and I dug into the banks and prepared for fording the river. Here the Indians shot some of our cows and some of the cattle, but we did not lose many at this place and passed over and through and came into (Pasvant) Valley and camped at some springs which I named Cedar Springs for there were cedars there and they kept that name. We drove up and

camped on Chalk Creek and here we found a very large valley. We found in this valley, at a creek, some corn the Indians had grown. We named it Corn Creek. We also named one creek New Years Creek for we camped here and smoothed a piece of wire grass ground and on New Years had a dance.

There was no snow and the Lord favored us and we felt to acknowledge His hand. We had been greatly blessed. We moved slowly along passed Pine and Cove Creeks as we named them down to Beaver Creek. We camped on the Sabbath days and held meetings, had some of the elders preaching to the camp and had some very interesting times. And when we got over to the Elk Horn Springs, there was a large camp at that place but there was quite a few of good horse teams that had gone on ahead over on Yellow Creek and camped, namely L. S. Smith, Tom Bringhurst, Charlie Harper, Daniel A. Miller and James Harmison, David Brinton and several others. This was a Saturday evening but our president and a large company with him were back some miles and the captain of the brethren, Brother Hoffheims, with a small cannon, as we had a small ordinance with us. Those of the weaker teams were behind. We had gotten our suppers and were comfortably seated in my carriage doing some writing with a pan of milk sitting on the top of the carriage away from the dogs. Bang went a cannon back north of us. We knew very well it was our gun and it created a great excitement in our camp. Brother

(Maman Johner) was elected captain of the horse company. Hurry, boys, the Indians are upon our brethren and they will be massacred. Some said they could hear the women and the children screaming. Captain (Palmer) came to my wagon in haste saying bishop what shall we do, those Indians are upon our President and company and I am afraid they will all be massacred. Said I, Brother Falmer, no cause of alarm. They have fired the canyon for a salute because of arriving into the valley of the Little Salt Lake, that is what it is. Said he, some say they can hear the women screaming. Well captain, what do you wish and it shall be done, said I. We think it wisdom to send a posse of the camp before us and have the men come and help us and we wish to corral our wagons as soon as possible and send a company to help them if they need help. All right, said I, but you will find it as I have told you. We pushed the wagons together and the milk spilt. The company departed, and it turned out to be just as I had told them. The President and boys with him laughed at us and said it was good enough for us for it was no business for us to have gone and left them. So, we had our fun for our pains. The boys ahead of us came back and it took them all night but we were glad that it was no worse, but they had to acknowledge I had it right and when our breakfast was over in the morning we hitched up and drove up to Red Creek and camped with the foremost company. It being Sabbath there, there should have been

a meeting called to worship God that in so doing we should have sanctified the Sabbath day and kept it holy, but some of the men wanted to see the goodly land. And I discovered the move and went and inquired where they were going. Out to see the country said they. Said I, will you let me go with you. Yes get your horse and come along said they. I never stopped to consider. I got my horse directly and we went up to Center Creek about five miles from Yellow Creek. We explored up the canyon a ways, found it pleasant and lovely with a very moderate upgrade of considerable breadth, grassy with some lime and (altamond) a good quality of soap in the ground. We crossed the creek. It was but a small creek and passed down a ways a little below the city of Parowan afterwards was built. Now the soil was red as the hills above us did abound with a red rock in different shapes and form, they did present a most beautiful and grand appearance, but verily the land did not look very inviting to me, but I had faith.

We were riding along and Brother Thomas Smith remarked, said he, I do not want to see any white man imposed upon so much as to be required to settle on such land as this. I heard the remark and called a halt. Said I, hold on boys let me tell you this very land that we stand on right here will produce abundantly of all kinds of grain and vegetables. Brother Thomas says, do you believe that bishop. Most certainly, I do said I. Do you suppose the Lord would ask His Saints to form

a settlement upon a poor piece of land? No certainly He will not, said I, this ground will certainly produce abundantly. They shook their heads, we passed on down to camp. Brother Bur Frost came out to meet us. Said he, boys you will get chastised severely. The President and company have arrived. He scolded, saying elders, seventies, and bishops going out on Sunday. Why did they not call a meeting and worship God and get His spirit on them. Said he, I had my horse saddled and in a few moments would have been astride him and after us, but President Smith came up and inquired where such and such ones were and being, how he commenced to scold for he felt the spirit of discontent which was with the brethren. Said he, I sneaked off and pulled the saddle off my horse, felt glad that I was not gone with you. We turned out and retired to camp, saw the President, he had done his scolding and he took me out by ourselves and inquired of me what discoveries we had made and what I thought of the land. I told him it would do. Said he, I can feel there is a dissatisfaction with the men in camp. I told him what had passed between us, the expressions they had made that I was surprised to hear from them and what I had prophesied of the land. I told him it would do, for I dare not bring an evil report of the land for I knew the Lord had sent us there to form a settlement, consequently it must be good. I told Brother George A. the soil was red and very inviting but it must be good. He seemed pleased with my

report of the goodly land. He made an inquiry of the other boys for he knew the spirit and feelings they had which he could discern and on the morrow the entire camp moved up to Center Creek and camped on the south side in fort form and turned out. It being on the 13th of January, 1857. There was plenty of grass but no snow. The winter, by the hand of the Lord was shaped for our salvation and that of our animals, for surely my horses fattened as fast running out in January as I ever saw a horse do on a plenty of good hay and grain. There was a plenty of good cedar and pinion pine on low hills nearby and by exploring down three or four, found plenty of good pine timber up a canyon of nice grade and easy to make a road. We soon opened a road up to timber, moved our camp on the north side of the creek where we built a town which is called Parowan. We turned out in mass and got our timber and put up a building of a house for a meeting house and then the brethren were set at liberty to build for themselves. I laid the foundation of the first dwelling house ever built by a white man south of Payson.

And it came to pass that a city sprang up not in a day but in a very few days. We laid up a city and made a strong corral, enclosing about three acres in the center of the fort.

We were soon organized into wards and it came to pass that I, Joseph Lee Robinson, was appointed to preside over the Fourth Ward. This duty I tried to perform to the best of

my ability. The Lord was with us and Brother George A, Smith proved to be a very good captain, a wise counselor and a very interesting president. By his appointment we had our meeting every Sabbath in the forenoon preaching, in the afternoon we were organized into a community of the whole. In these meetings we would fetch out of the brethren their best views and experience in agriculture and in every branch of business pertaining to our mission and labors. Then when he had gotten all the information he could get from us he would spend his best judgement and would say, boys, let us do so and so. Our farming was divided into three surveys namely the upper, the rabbits and the wire grass surveys. I took a farm in the rabbit bush and upper surveys and was appointed one of the committee of three to divide the water for the three farms and then I was made water master of both those farms, namely upper and rabbit bush. Our practice was to notify every man what hour he should take to water and how long he would have it. I think we had the most satisfactory and the best order that I have ever seen in the mountains and in good time when spring came we were on hand to plow and sow and plant our crops. And it came to pass that the self same spot of ground upon which our horses stood, when the remarks were made and I offered the prophesy in favor of the goodness of the soil, even that was tested and proved all that had been said in its favor. This very season experience has since taught us

that where lime rock lies in the hills above, the soil will be good and productive and that is why this land was good for we found lime in quantities lying above this land.

Now we found ourselves sorrowed with redskins, our Lamanite brethren in their wild devilish state, and it came to pass some of our horses and cattle came up missing. A mass meeting was called and the result was a law was passed that the entire stock of the camp (in all about 500 head) should be herded with three efficient men or grown boys on horses with good guns and ammunition, and it was motioned and carried that I should have the job and see that it should truly and faithfully be done. I accepted, but not until I had it fixed in the shape to suit me and the entire camp agreed to it and that was the price was fixed for men and horses per day and in the case that I could not get volunteers, I should have power to press any man owning stock into service, and that each head of stock should be held to pay Its proportion of the expenses until it was paid, and they all said amen even so. And upon those terms I took the job which placed upon my shoulders more public responsibilities than upon any other man in the camp.

It came to pass that I made it a rule to attend to all of my public duties first and then what time there was left I could improve for my own benefit, but I have always felt that I was upon a mission on this earth and that I was and should



be laboring for Zion and that it was the kingdom of God or nothing for me.

### *Spring 1851*

We all labored very faithfully and in a short time, even very soon, we had a city built, the ground broke for our seeds to be put in and in the spring of 1851 President Brigham and party visited our place and stopped with us a few days. They preached and fortified and cheered us up a bit and they returned rejoicing.

While they were with us we went to Red Creek and just across the north side of the creek there had been evidently a town in some formerly time as there were a large number of (tombs or mounds) small ones and we opened several of them finding cooking utensils and broken pottery of a superior quality in abundance and several relics and some corn on the cob in very good condition. And it came to pass that many of the brethren were homesick and begged to be liberated that they might return home, but that was something that I never had done for I went prepared to stop until my mission was filled and was fully accepted and should be honorably discharged. Brother George A. asked the President (Brigham Young) if he might come up with him but he says no, you and Brother Robinson stay until the last of August to attend the

September conference, saying my team would bring us up in six days and then we could come back in six days so that we had our instructions.

And we soon had a saw mill in operation so that we soon had an abundance of splendid quality of fine lumber. The Indians took one of my cows, a very large milk cow with bell and strap so that they are in debt to me that much. But I suppose they will be abundantly able to pay all their debts when they get their land, for it came to pass when Jesus visited them or their fathers rather after his resurrection, he gave them all this continent and South America also. But the Gentiles have come since and taken possession of the most of their lands and they shall redeem it for they will receive the gospel. They shall become the battle ax of the Almighty God and their horns shall be made iron and their hoofs shall be made brass and they shall go through the Gentiles and tread them down and tear them in pieces and all of their enemies shall be cut off, so we think they will become possessors of their land and be able to pay all their debts. For it is the eternal decree of the great God that every man shall pay all his debts or he shall be shut up in prison and where God and Christ are, they can never come worlds without end.

And it came to pass that we, George A. Smith and I, Joseph L. Robinson, started for Salt Lake in my carriage. The Lord had given me a very excellent fine span of large black horses,

great travellers. We set sail on the 22nd of August, 1851. In the morning one of them (the horses) came up very sick and our company started, but we did not know whether we could go or not. But we prayed for the mare and the Lord heard our prayers and she got better and we started after noon and overtook our company in good time. In Corn Creek in the Parvant Valley we met Brother [Goot?] and others going to Parowan. I wrote a letter to my wife Susan and sent it back by him to her in which I told her to be of good courage that she should get along well, that she should bear a son and that his name should be Solomon. We were blessed of the Lord, got through all right and found my family well and very glad to see me, as well as I was to see them, for it was the longest time that I had ever been absent from them since we were married. It was now going on ten months. We attended conference the 6th of September, it being held one month before the time to give the missionaries more time to cross the plains. It came to pass that I soon received a letter from my wife in Parowan. In it, she gave me the good news and I received a very pleasing intelligence that I had a son in Parowan, that he was born the 27th of August, 1851. The mother and child were doing well, thank the Lord.

Sometime after the conference, the President with a good company started for the Parvant Valley south to hunt a place to locate a state house for it was even so that the government

of the United States had given unto us a territorial form of government and had made Brigham Young governor of the same, even over Utah (this was October 21st, 1851 when the party started its return trip to Parowan). Now this was effected (the territorial government) under the reign of President Millard Fillmore. He was a very sensible and good man and it came to pass that Brother George and I went with this party. We had a good time with them and arrived at Chalk Creek on the 27th of October, 1851. And it turned out that Brother Brigham, or rather President Young and I assisted Apostle Orson Pratt to clear away some cedar boughs on a tree that he could hang up his instruments to get the altitude or something of the kind. When this was effected the President said to me, will you walk with me, and we two passed up south to a beautiful, sightly spot and halted at the place where the state house was afterwards built. And as we arrived Brother Heber C. Kimball and another brother met us. Brother George A. Smith saw us and he came tearing toward us. Brother Brigham made the remark, there comes Brother George forking out. Yes said I, that is a right good man. Well he is, said Brother Brigham and he has a brother John L. Smith who will make another good man for he will go for counsel where he should. President Young said (in locating the state house) as a very sightly spot, a lovely place, yes said Brother Heber this is a very nice place for the state house, yes said I this is the spot and there is a

beautiful cedar tree that ought to be left standing. Yes, said Brother Young, pointing to a beautiful cedar grove, those tree ought not to be cut down. No, said President Kimball, they should not be cut down, no said I, it should be \$40 fine if any man cuts one down, and at this junction Brother George came up, said President Young to Brother George, we have located the state house, this is the spot, we will go right down and have the boys make the stakes and set Brother Joseph to surveying out the city.

We passed right down to camp and work was commenced immediately. Brother Anson Call, with his train just arrived. Brother Anson come, said Brother Brigham, to him Brother Call, we have located the state house and the city will be right above here and here will be your fort for the present and he continued his instructions to Brother Call saying, the boys are now at work making stakes. Brother (Frose) will go immediately to surveying the city. There is a beautiful grove of cedars (pointing to that grove we just alluded to) we don't want that grove cut, saying it is a \$40 fine for any man that cuts the green cedar in that grove. Now Brother Anson Call has just arrived with his company to locate and start the settlement in that valley as the President had relieved him from the Little South Stake Mission (as he was called upon that mission with us) to preside over a mission in the Pasvant Valley (that's Parvant or Pasvant Valley), now this valley received its

name and was from this time called Millard County and that city was named Fillmore in honor to that man that gave unto us a territorial form of government and gave unto Brigham Young for governor. Now Brigham Young was the best governor that Utah has ever had and Millard the best president.

Now President Young assisted me with his own hands to adjust my own carriage and prepare it for Brother George and I to start in the morning for Parowan. Now verily, the President and I had had a considerable of a conversation upon the subject of Brother George returning to Parowan. Now Brother Brigham was a very cautious man. He said he wanted us to go to Parowan but he was afraid it would not be safe on account of Indians. I told him that I understood the situation of the mission and that it greatly needed his presence. I told him we did not fear to go, we carried 21 shots ready and that we should not stop out only one night. He said if we could get a company of wise men we should go. I told Brother George, he was pleased, and he set right about to hunt the men. He found three that agreed to go with us and we were making speedy preparations to start in the morning. Now the three were Chandler Holbrook and son and Chuging Smith.

Now morning came and we hitched up for a start but one man ready to go with us, namely C. Smith, but the other two decided not to go. We three started from Fillmore to Parowan and the President and party returned back, but we three were

speedily were carried on our way by a large beautiful pair of black horses, the fleetest team or pair of animals that we ever travelled with in these mountains. We took great pleasure in riding after them, we had no use for a whip. They would take us as far as we wished to ride. We drove on and camped at night in the midst of a (valley) more than a gunshot from any brush and watched my horses until dark then tied them, fed them oats and found ourselves all right in the morning. We thanked our God and away we went to Parowan before night. There we found a people wonderfully blessed to see us. We attended meeting the Sunday following and we both spoke wonderfully good to the people. An appointment was given for the afternoon for Brother George to preach. I called and saw Brother Smith between meetings. He said to me, bishop, what shall I preach this afternoon. Said I to him, open your mouth wide and God shall fill it. Said he, I'll do it so he did so and I say to you that Brother George A. Smith did deliver one of the most powerful and instructive discourses that I have ever heard him preach in my life.

We remained at Parowan for some time. Brother Smith was very busy counseling and regulating and setting in order the mission and we left them and returned home to Salt Lake in the fall. But they were sorry to have us leave them.

We had very good luck, found the brethren of Fillmore well and in very good spirits and very busy. We found our oats all

right that we had left with them until our return for Governor Young had given us directions that we should leave some with them until we should return, and directly after our return we saw in the Deseret News the names of the committee that had been to Fillmore and had located the state house. And it came to pass that Joseph L. Robinson was one of those and I drew \$83.09 (\$84.00) for my services which came very good for which I felt very thankful to God, my Heavenly Father. And it came to pass that we in the Latter-day Saints labor with all our might to build up the kingdom of God on the earth. We labored and God blessed our labor, He began to bless the earth for our sakes, for verily we had prayed earnestly to our Father that he would abundantly bless the seasons, the soils, the mountain, the waters, that they would greatly increase them and he would increase our faith and so he did. By the holy priesthood he did bless the lands, the mountains, the waters, and the seasons and truly they were blessed for it is a marvelous fact that where there was but a very small mountain stream, there came down from the mountains scarcely sufficient to water our good large farm as in the case of the Sessions settlement at Centerville. Brother Sessions and one or two or some few families settled there. They didn't want any more land taken in that vicinity or said they there will be no water for you, we claimed what there is and shall need more to water the farms already taken and



so said Brother Cherry on Cherry Creek that he would need all of that stream to water his farm and after this Brother Thomas Grover took up a piece of land on Cherry Creek and commenced farming and they got to quarreling over the water, came very near fighting over it and Brother Grover left and settled on a small creek, a little south of North Cottonwood. So that we discovered that the Lord would certainly perform a miracle to increase the waters for the benefit of and the salvation of the Saints of God in these last days. It is just as great a miracle as when Moses smote the rock and brought water for the salvation of the House of Israel in his day. Our God works in mysterious ways His wonders to perform.

[Editor's note: For the next four pages of Grandfather's journal I shall dictate exactly as he has written with his own spelling and punctuation.]

"And at our return to Salt Lake, we learned, the president, or rather the governor, and suit, had been in, about one week, but we were paid to learn that President Young had ben very sick, but was happy to learn he is better now.

As we have remarked we labored with all our might very diligently, to build up the kingdom of God, on the earth, and we rejoiced greatly in our labors, for we knew, verily I did know, that God, had restored the holy gospel, in its purity, and fullness, and that he had committed the dispensation of the fullness of times, and that it behold us as elders in Israel

to assist, yea to labor with all our mights, that we might earn an interest in that kingdom, for surely the scriptures do say, that every man shall be rewarded according to his works, now with regard to works for worship, we discover as we reflect upon the works that have to be accomplished, in the great latter day work, some seem to think to preach, sing, and to pray, was the great bulk of the worship of Almighty God. But behold ye, these things are very proper and necessary in their place and time, but preaching, is but the smallest part of this great latter day work. We will now enumerate some of the essential part of the great labor. The manual labor that have to be performed by the sons of Jacob, but will be performed principally by the sons of Ephraim, and Manasseh, truly the gospel has to be preached, to the nations and people of the earth, and also the poor, the elect of God that receive the gospel, among those nations have to be gathered up to Zion, but where is the money coming from to defray expences, to sustain the families of those elders performing this great work, well, we will come right home and see what there is to do, we begin to annumerate, roads have to be made, bridges have to be built, roads into the canyons, timber got out, saw mills built, farms to be opened, and fenced, and build, dobies to be mad, bricks also, rocks to be halld and laid into foundations, dwelling houses to be built, school houses to be built, meeting houses to be built, tabernacles to be built,

temples to be built, and large numbers of men and women have to be supported, while they labor constantly in those temples, to perform ordinances for the living, and for our dead, canals to be made, to draw water out to irigate our crops, cities to be built, orchards to be set and cared for, viniards all so, horses, cattle, and sheep raised and cared for, all these, and a thousand other things, that might be mentioned, which are really essential and nesesary, for the convenience and comfort of the people which God, requires at our hands, and in which he is highly pleased, when these important labors are performed, in his name, and with an eye single to his glory, yea the meeting together often and speaking often one to another, and offering up our sacraments unto the Most High, baptizing and confirming and blessing our children, keeping the Word of Wisdom, marring wives, and raising up children to the Lord, now verily, I say, that inasmuch as any or all these things are faithfully done, in the spirit of the gospel, they shall be acceptable unto God our Heavenly Father for Worship, shall be just as holy, and shall be counted works, which shall receive merrit or reward, as preaching the gospel, or doing any other work in the kingdom of God.

*April 1853*

On April 20, 1853 I left my home in North Cottonwood, to take a mission south with the President, and Governor, Brigham Young, and party, expecting to take Brother George A. (Smith) to visit my family at Parawan and preach the gospel to the people, as I had been voted for a house missionary at our April conference, expecting to perform a preaching mission south, left Salt Lake City 21st in company with Brother Peck, Bull-ock, and others, took John S. Smith with me, as far as Provo, expecting to take Brother George A. from that place, as him and President had gone there, and when we arrived on the 22nd, found Presidents Brigham and Heber C. and George A. there, a meeting was called in the afternoon, and we had the great pleasure of listening to some very interesting discourses delivered by Brother, or President, Brigham and Heber and others, I put up with Brother George A. and family.

The next day, 23rd, Governor Young called a council as he had been credibly informed that there were several hundred Spaniards in our territory travelling contrary to law, and that they were cottegeing with the Indians, to turn them against us, so that he thought it expedient to, and he did issue a proclamation, ordering a distachment of 30 or 40 men to be raised immediately to travel with, and in front of this company south as far as the settlements did extend, reconortering the

valleys and to take into custody all groops of Spaniards, or any suspicious characters. Brother Deminicus Carter concluded to take Brother George A. and wife in his carriage, so that John S. could go with me, drove to Springville, a meeting was called in the afternoon, and some very rich instructions was given by President Brigham Young, all those meetings were, very largely attended, 24th Sunday we travelled to Palmira on Spanish Fork, a meeting had been apointed Apostle John Taylor spoke, and was succeeded by President Young, who informed us that his people had to fort up or we should not be safe for ten years to come, for said he these mountains would be full of robbers, like the Gadiantan robbers of old, and that he had been wearied with the foolishness and teasings of this people. They wanted to scatter abroad, thereby exposing themselves to becoming the easy prey to their enemies, he said this people must be wide awake, and have their arms and amunition, in readiness, and build strong holds, or we should be swept of from the earth, and after dinner the President and suit (party) drove to Payson. We put up with Brother Mclellen, the President of that branch called a meeting in the evening, elders Amasa Lyman, and C. C. Rich talked good to that people, 25th Monday there were some Spaniards taken into custody, at this place, and we drove to Nephi on Salt Creek, to put up with Brother Hoyts people, a family of Saints that I became acquainted with, where I first received the

gospel in 1836 in the town of Boonville, Oneida Co. St. of NY. They lived in what was called the Black River country, seven miles from my place, the first Mormon meeting that I ever attended after I were baptized, was at their house, at our first and earliest experience in the new and everlasting gospel, oh what a sweet time we had together, and how I loved to meet with them, and how they loved to have me come and meet and talk to and with them, they said when I came it seemed to them that Israel had come, oh Israel in all your abidings prepare for your Lord when you hear these glad; tidings, now the good times we enjoyed together we shall never forget, no never, the Lord was with us then and we can safely say he has never left us yet, that is not all, we hope and pray he never may, while we dwell on this earth, for surely we are only strangers and pilgrims here, and we are seeking a better country, a house not mad with hands eternal in the heavens, and it came to pass when we arrived at Nephi, I found mother Hoyt sick, and I anointed her with holy oil in the name of the Lord, and in His name administered a blessing unto her and she was blessed indeed, meeting was held in the evening preaching by the twelve, and succeeded by Brother President Kimball he spoke in his usual earnest energetick way, and he profesied that every settlement in the mountains would have to fort up, or they would be cut of from the face of the earth, or be swept out of existence.

This evening the detachment arrived about 40 in number with their baggage wagons trimmed and equipped as the law directs prepared for duty. Tuesday morning 26th, President Young informed us that he should proceed no farther south than Sanpete that he would take Brother G. W. with him, that Brother Amasa and Rich would proceed directly to San Barnadeno, that Brother Erastus Snow would go to Iron County on the iron business, and that Judge Snow would go to hold courts, and that he wanted Brother John L. and I to go south and preach the gospel to every settlement of Saints, preach to them what the spirit should dictate, and God should, bless us, and it came to pass, that we proceeded on our journey and mission, Brother Brigham said we should be gone about 15 days, and about 30 of this detachment under the command of Captain Wall, proceeded south with us, which made a good lively crowd, we camped near the bridge on the Severe River, Wednesday 27th we drove to Fillmore found the people in a very good condition, Brother Call the president of that place apointed a meeting in the evening for Brother Snow to preach, and he called on me to take the lead in speaking, and I had very good liberty a good flow of the spirit and next Brother John S. and then he spoke good to the Saints an excellent good meeting, for the spirit of the Lord was truly with us.

Thursday 28th we passed the brimstone mines and camped on Pine Creek the soldier boys and company with us, we had

a very windy night. Some carriages blown over and covers of, other ways we found ourselves all right in the morning, we fed our horses and got our breakfast early and John S., Friday 29th, and I set out for Parawan, the company would be too days, but we drove it in one day, we fronted a very heavy south wind, and we drove into the creek before dark Brother Jame gave us some supper we had a good chat with him and left an apointment for a meeting with them there, and we drove up to Parawan found our people all well and all the people very glad to see us, we rested, and visited, until the company came up the next evening, Saturday a snowy day the company and soldier boys came in and a meeting was called and Amasa and Rich preached to the people, Sunday first day of May we attended meetings, I was called up the first speaker and had very good liberty, felt myself very much at home, Judge Snow succeded me in the morning and in the afternoon John S. Smith preached to the people, in the evening we attended the prayer circle and had a good time there.

The twelve went to Seder City and held meeting in the evening, Monday the 2nd visiting with the people all well, Tuesday the 3rd I went to Seder City took my wife, and Aunt Mary Smith and Gritta George A. Smith's wife with us to Seder City to visit while we went south on our preaching mission we visited the iron works the furnace was in operation, saw



a specimen of the ore, it is said there is a considerable silver in it probably enough to pay for working it.

Wednesday 4th we drove to Harmony put up and visited with John L. Lee [or John S. Lee] and family had an interesting visit with them and on the 5th we administered the word of life to them, and they seemed to greatly appreciate the same, we had very good liberty, in our meetings, I spoke first and Brother John S. followed from there we drove to Shirts Fort held meeting had a good time with them all so they agreed to obey counsel, we again returned to Seder City staid with Brother Lunt and family we preached to them and gave them good counsel they seemed to appreciate our visit and instructions much, we saw the iron foundary in operation and we rejoice, that our people were engaged in so good a work.

Saturday 7th took the two Sisters Smiths and drove to Johnsons Fort held a meeting had a good time with them they rejoiced much and said they would obey counsel, then we drove to Parawan found all well. We went to Red Creek and held a meeting, John S. took the lead we spoke by the Holy Ghost and the brethren greatly rejoiced, and several of them spoke, and surely we had a very affecting time it was with difficulty that we could get away from them, and it was at a late our in the evening, we returned home. Sunday 8th we attended meeting at Parawan, Brother James Brown a returning

missionary from the Society Island was called to the stand, he gave a brief history of his success and persecutions while on his mission. And Brother John S. followed him, and he gave us a very fine discourse. In the afternoon John D. Lee gave a very good preach, and Apostle Erastus Snow, spoke, and gave us a very interesting discourse, informing us that God would take care of his priesthood, Brother Snow informed me that he could not go home until the last of the week and he instructed the President to give an other apointment for me to preach next Sunday evening and also a party for us on Monday at four o'clock I atended a corum meeting with the brethren in the evening, Monday 9th. I went into the field and plowed and put in some oats, the boys whitewashed the house and decorated it with flowers, that it looked very beautiful indeed.

(May 1853) At four o'clock, the horn blew for the gathering, the people gathered, the President called on me to open the party by prayer, and also to make a speech, while the people were gathering which I did, the spirit rested down upon the people, the music was on hand, the party commenced their exercises about five, we were favored with some very nice songs by the brethren, at sunset and intermission of one hour, we had good order, a splendid party, a better one I never atended, we enjoyed ourselves so well, I am sure the Lord must have been there, or we could not have been so happy,

my wife and I retired at two o'clock, the youngsters kept it up until day. We should have remarked, at eleven or twelve, we were treated with refreshments, cake, pies and cheese in abundance, but no spiritous liquors.

Thursday 12th Brother Smith and I went up to the main mines and gathered (ofthiun) and and gum, in the evening attended meeting, I preached to the people, and enjoyed a good flow of the spirit, John S. spoke after me and several of the brethren, spoke all so, the Holy Ghost rested down in powr we had a good time."

[Editor's note: The foregoing is a sample of Great Grandfather's writing with his punctuation and spelling. The following and remainder of his journal will be edited as dictated by his great grandson Dr. Oliver Preston Robinson.]

Friday, May 13th, snowing fast and a powerful rain through the day, and rained considerably Saturday while we were preparing some hay feed for our journey home.

On Sunday, May 15th, Elder Erastus Snow is on hand to start for home. I took leave of my wife and little children. They hated to have me leave. My little Mary Jane was determined to go with me, but I could not take her from her mother. At Red Creek we broke one arm to the tongue of my carriage, but got it mended there. We took dinner with Brother William Dame and drove over the Beaver Mountain where we camped.

We were in number of men three wagons and twelve animals. It was storming some and I was elected captain.

I wish here to remark that my mission and visit here in Parowan and Iron County has been a very pleasant one and I trust our labors have not been in vain. Brother John S. Smith is of a very lively turn, harmless inoffensive, a good counselor, first rate company, a very fine young man. I have enjoyed myself with him the best and a better partner I could not wish for. I feel to ask the blessings of our Father which art in Heaven upon the good people of Iron County that they may live and be inspired to keep the counsel given them and that they may be blessed in all things especially in getting good wives and bright and interesting children, also in extracting the iron from the elements.

Monday. May the 16th, we passed the brinstone mines [possibly brimstone mines] and two of the boys went and gathered a quantity of good specimen of good brimstone. We camped in Cove Valley where there was very good feed for our animals. Now this valley, because of its peculiar location and formation named it as we went down in January 1850, as we also named a good many valleys, creeks, and springs.

Tuesday the 17th, some of our animals were lost this morning but through the blessings of God they were soon found and we were on our way travelling and rejoicing. But, while crossing Corn Creek some of our horses and wagons

mired down and were all got out without damage. We now find ourselves in the Parvant Valley and at five in the evening we arrived at Fillmore, Millard County. I put up at Brother Hoyt's remaining with them about two days and was very kindly treated by them. We stopped for Judge Snow to hold court in that town, the capital of this territory, because the state house was or had been located there. We find the people well but not yet fortified as we had counseled them as we went down, but they were making preparations to in the near future perform that laborious and important work. Now, we can discover what an easy matter it would be for the Spaniards and Indians to smite and use up the entire people of the Saints in their scattered settlements so far apart from each other unless we were fortified or had strongholds and were fortified. Now, Brothers Brigham and Heber saw it clear but for the interposition of Almighty God and our Heavenly Father we should be used up now and long before this. We should have been swept off from the earth but for the promise that God had made that this kingdom (which is no less than the kingdom of Almighty God which Daniel spoke of that should be cut out of the mountain without the hands of men) should not, no never be destroyed in this nor in no other or future age or time, worlds without end, but it will be wisdom in us, his Saints to be very energetic in obeying counsel. When the holy priesthood prompts we should learn to be quick to respond

to the promptings of the spirit of God for God knoweth all things, he knows our faith is weak, our knowledge very limited, that the enemy is on the alert watching for an opportunity to destroy the Church or Saints of God from off the face of the earth. Now how much better it would be for us to go to work with all our might and throw up some kind of wall of defense than to be invaded, our animals stolen from us and cut off from the earth like our brethren were at Hawn's Mill there in Missouri. For as the Lord lives, if our brethren had obeyed the counsel of the Prophet Joseph and had gone so far west as he told them they would not have been killed at that time, and so in many other cases, if the Saints would obey counsel they should have escaped many calamities and deaths also.

In the evening that we arrived at Fillmore Judge Snow opened court and it was in session about ten days and we had to wait for him. Thursday the 19th we left Fill more and camped in Round Valley. There was some rain this evening and as the gentle rain distilled from the heavens, our hearts were chuck full of gratitude to Almighty God for His goodness unto us and for his blessings unto His beloved Saints. Yea, we reflected with wonder and admiration in the marvelous power of God which had been manifest in the entire history and travels of this people, thus far, yea, we received a refreshing from the presence of the Lord, we rejoice greatly in the Holy One of Israel, we felt that the Lord was with us and

that we stood strong and would not want. We felt that He would certainly bear off this kingdom triumphantly and that this people should not be moved nor be brought under the Gentile yoke any more.

Now, had I not been taught of the law, and had I not great confidence in God and in His holy promises and ability and willingness to perform on His part all that the Holy Ghost had spoken through His servants, the prophets, I should not dare venture a prophecy of this kind. We dare venture a prophecy that 40 years or thereabouts in the wilderness and the Prophet Joseph shall come, Zion shall be redeemed for surely the battle-ax of the Almighty God shall be sharpened up and shall be placed in the hands of the mighty and strong and it shall beat in pieces many people and their gain shall be consecrated unto the Lord and their substance unto the Lord of the whole earth and all of the enemies of the house of Joseph shall be cut off by this battle-ax of the Lord our God.

Friday the 20th we drove to Nephi on Salt Creek and put up with Brother Timothy Hoyt and found his father, the old soldier, sick and his mother, the old lady, not well. Yet I anointed them both and laid my hands upon them and blessed them in the name of the Lord. Here is where we parted with the prophets of Brigham and Heber, about 23 days gone by.

Saturday the 21st I drove to the Spanish Fork and found this stream very high, about one-fourth of a mile wide and

with much difficulty we crossed it. We worked some four hours wading through mud and water and had to haul our wagons over by hand. The horses having all they could do to get over loose. At nine o'clock at night we got all over and built a campfire, dried ourselves, and felt to thank the Lord that we were prospered thus far on our journey home. We felt humble and submissive in the hand of God.

Sunday the 22nd we started very early, drove to Provo, stopped with Brother George A. Smith, He gave us some breakfast and he wished us to attend the forenoon meeting and preach to them, which we did. We found a very full house and Brother James Brown was called up to give a brief account of his mission to the Society Islands. Then I was called up preach to the Saints. I had a very good liberty, a good flow of the spirit, talked good to the Saints. Brother John S. was next, called up he spoke about the same length of time with energy and power. We drove to the point of the mountain and camped.



·1853-1857·

## **Return to North Cottonwood, (Farmington) Utah**

Farming · Building a wall around the town

Monday the 23rd we drove into Salt Lake City, fed and got dinner. Sister Nancy Russet gave us our dinner. I left my partner John S. and I drove home to North Cottonwood and found my family alive and well, except my first wife, Maria. She had been very sick and through the blessings of God she was better. I felt truly thankful that I was again at home and that I had been so abundantly blessed and favored of the Lord. The very thought and knowledge that we were in the service of the true and divine God and being inspired of God and that he was with us and did really accept our labors was truly a source of great comfort and joy to me.

Tuesday May 24th, 1853. I am well and at home with my family. It has been raining all this week. Thursday 26th I took some wheat and milk and two of my wives to Brother Harrison's to a wool picking and my little sons, Oliver and Ebenezer went on the mountains for poles. They went several times this week and they have a fine lot of them. They have worked hard and have sheared my sheep and made a considerable fence while

I was gone and also put in a considerable crop. They are extra good boys.

Sunday the 29th—a very pleasant morning. Some of my family have gone to meeting but I stay home and attend to the sick. My wife Maria is very sick.

There is a great amount of rain these days and we have to labor hard to keep our milkers out of the mud.

On June 4th we sent one wagon to work on the temple. Ebenezer is mowing hay to feed his team on the temple.

On Sunday the 5th, the first pleasant day since I arrived home from my journey south, I drove up our black horses the first time since they returned home and they look very well considering the hard trip and the long journey they had just finished.

I took two of my wives and my son Oliver to the city and attended meeting. We heard some very interesting discourses from Elder Parley P. Pratt and President Brigham Young and others. We took dinner with George Slade and family and agreed with Brother James Cummins to board my son while working on the temple. I agreed to furnish them with butter and cheese. Sister Jane Slade came home with us on a visit. We arrived home at dark found my wife Maria very sick nigh unto death. I immediately prayed for her and laid my hands upon her head in the name of the Lord and she revived and

seemed a little easier. We found it was the turn of life and with her it was within a hair's breadth of going.

On June 6th, Monday, we loaded a load of hay and sent my son Ebenezer with it and a team to Salt Lake City to work on the temple and he labored there several weeks with one yoke of cattle and wagon excavating for the foundation of that holy house. This afternoon my wife is much worse, I again administered to her in the name of the Lord and I baptized her for her health and she was a little better.

On June 7th my wife is a little better. I baptized her again for her health and went to the city and took my wife Laurinda and her sister (Stad) to Brother Cleveland's on a visit and went to the city and got some medicines for my wife and arrived home at dark. I was exceedingly happy to find my wife still better and felt to praise the name of the Lord for His great goodness to me and to my family for I do positively declare that in my estimation my wife, Maria, is as pure a daughter of Zion and as virtuous and as honest a daughter as lives in the 19th century.

Sunday, June 11, 1853, a part of the family attend meeting. I am writing some in my journal and one letter to my wife Susan in Parowan, Iron County. The waters are higher this season with us than ever known before we came to this country and through this entire season we were very diligent in all our labors in hauling wood, timbers and poles from the

mountains in fencing and farming and hauling wood and hay to Salt Lake and making adobes and in working on the temple.

August the 17th, I sent my son Ebenezer with one yoke of cattle with a company to Fort Hall to fetch wagons and other property for the Church.

September. I sent one letter to Father Woods people living in the State of New York and stopped over night with Brother George A. Smith. We went and saw President Young and had a talk with him about the subject of building forts. I told him Major Smith had located the little fort at Farmington in a very improper place. I told him that in my feelings I felt very much opposed to hauling and laying up a rock wall in such a place as that especially if I should be required to build a house and live there. He President said to me we have formed a very favorable opinion of Brother Thomas and we would not like to interfere with his operations and location as we have appointed him to locate a fort for the people of the ward in North Cottonwood. Brother George A. remarked to the President just then said he, Brother Joseph has a very good idea of a suitable spot to locate a fort and he has been with me and assisted in locating several forts in the south and I think his judgement very good in such matters. Then President Young said to me, Joseph I'll tell you what to do, as Brother Smith has authority to locate and perform that work or see that it is done. He lays up a piece for you to do

and you go right to work and perform your part and it shall be all right. Then when you have authority to perform a work of public nature, said he, you can say boys I want you to do as you are told for I have done just what I was told said I Brother Brigham has instructed me and that is what I will do. After this, said President Young to me, Brother Joseph it will have to be right if it is not right as it is, it will be changed until it will give satisfaction. After we had left the President I said to Brother George S., I don't know but I may have done the wrong thing in saying anything about it to him. No, said he, it may be you will have from this very circumstance a job similar to perform some day.

Sunday, June 26, 1853, I obtained from Brigham Young a permit for Brother Bastion of Iron County to get a second wife and sent it and also a letter to my beloved wife Susan in Parowan, sent by Brother Benson of Parowan whilst he was in the city. My sick wives are some better but very sick yet. I, with a portion of my family attended meeting at the tabernacle in Salt Lake City and heard Elder Orson Hyde and President Brigham Young preach upon the subjects of angels being our guardian spirits, proving from the scriptures the importance of their mission and also the great and mighty part they have to take in the great work of the last days, even the marvelous work and wonder that God our Heavenly Father is performing and that the Latter-day Saints are engaged in

and have embraced and are assured of being the authors of. But it is God's work. He is the great author of what is called Mormonism. He is responsible and there are myriads of angels also which are very deeply interested in this latter day work. They certainly will act well their part in this great drama doing all in their power to bring to pass the restoration of the House of Israel, even God's elect and the fulfilling of all the promises of God and the predictions of the holy prophets. They have their mission to perform. They will have as it were the bulk of the burden to bear, and how thankful we ought to be as servants of the most high God. How we the elders of Israel ought to be encouraged to press on, not to get rich, but to build up the kingdom of God on the earth, realizing that all depends upon the kingdom of God being established on this earth. If that is not accomplished, then surely there will be no riches, honor, power, glory and happiness for us the Latter-day Saints hereafter. For surely there is not a son or daughter of Zion on this earth but what there are angels which are charged to watch over them and there never was a prophet or any important event transpire on this earth but that there were angels sent to instruct, regulate and prepare them for their work and to bring the necessary intelligence with regard to that event. Now with regards to the agency of men, God has made man a free agent. He has given unto him power to choose and to refuse. He can perform a work that

shall be meritorious. He may and can earn an inheritance in the kingdom of God. The power is within him if he will rise up in the name of the Lord and in faith make a mighty effort and call upon the name of the Lord to help and surely He will help him. As Paul said through Christ, strengthen me and I can do all things but then again, man left to himself is very weak and without faith he can do nothing. But as man has his agency he must be responsible for his acts. Now, in these last days God has revealed himself to man and hath sent his holy angels which have communicated to man the great plan of salvation. He has sent his angels and committed the everlasting gospel with all its gifts and graces and his angels have given the power and authority of God the holy priesthood to administer the same to all men and give unto them the Holy Ghost even to every one of the whole human family that will receive it, while those that will not receive it shall be damned, saith the Lord God.

On February the 16th, 1853, I received in holy wedlock Lydia Foster, an amiable young woman of 22 from the hands of the Prophet, Brigham Young, for which blessing, I thank my God.

Now with regard to our Fort Wall business, the Indians had in several places killed some of our people and had stolen and drove away some of our stock and an excitement was created among our people and it has been decided that the

people should build walls around our cities or forts. And it came to pass that our people of North Cottonwood were called together and consulted and did agree to lay out a city and called it Farmington and agreed to build a fort or rather a dirt wall around the same.

### *March 1854*

On the 19th of March, 1854, the people of Farmington were called together and informed that we should go right about to be putting up our wall around the city of Farmington. Our walls should be of dirt four feet thick and six feet high. And it came to pass that we prepared our molds and brought them and set them up and commenced to make our wall, it being the first wall that was made in Farmington. I had taken three lots and my oldest son had taken one and our share of wall for the lots would be 24 rods and we worked very hard and faithful and remained at work during this week and made about eight rods of wall.

A few days since, Dr. Willard Richards passed away and has gone to rest—a counselor to President Brigham Young, a good man and a good scholar he will be missed.

The 25th—the day to muster, we trained, the Nauvoo Legion met often and drilled.



April the 6th, 1854, I attended conference in Salt Lake. There were a good number of elders called on missions and a number of the twelve appointed to preside over stakes which are being organized in the states and one in California and President Young at this conference introduced a new order which we termed a new and old and an excellent order, that is for the Saints, one and all, to deed all their property to the Church that we should become Church property which order was hailed with a great deal of enthusiasm by many and a good many what are called Mormons are going to California this spring there is gold there.

On April the 17th I attended meeting at our school house and by appointment I preached to the Saints and had a good flow of spirit and taught the Saints to be humble and obedient to counsel recommending this new order our all becoming Church property, advising them to honestly and faithfully enter into it with all their mind, might and strength, saying to them that God would bless them, saying this is the way I feel, that it is an order sent from God. Some were afraid there would be some catch about it but I do not think so. I consider our President to be an inspired holy man of God and what he said was all inspiration.

We are now preparing with all our might to obey counsel, and that is to till well our farms and build up our fort walls, to build and move into the cities. We have dug some cellars,

laid a foundation for an adobe house and are making shingles and fencing and performing much labor. We are attending our meetings, fast and Sabbath meetings and as God has blessed me with a good team and carriage often on Sabbath days and always on conference occasions, go to the Salt Lake Tabernacle. It was such a feast and treat also to us to get to our meetings and hear the pleasing word of God dispensed from time to time, knowing as we certainly did, that God was with his people and that our elders and apostles were inspired and holy men of God.

May the 1st, 1854. President Young and company start this week on a trip south to visit and bless the Saints, but on account of the press of business I could not go with him this time.

June 12th, Alva Foster Carpenter, commenced working on my house building in Farmington City. A great hailstorm came about the middle of this month destroying crops and doing much damage.

June the 25th. On this Sunday, Brother Thomas Grover and I preached to the Saints in Farmington.

June 27th. Tuesday, we attended a good two days conference.

Sunday, July 2nd, 1854. We attended meeting in the Tabernacle and on the 4th attended celebration in Salt Lake.

July the 6th, 1854. My fourth wife Lydia bore to me my eighth son. Mother and child are doing well thank God.

On Sunday, the 8th, we attended meeting in the Tabernacle and again on the 15th attended meeting in the Tabernacle.

On the 16th of July, 1854, a dreadful storm of grasshoppers are eating up my wheat and garden.

On the 24th we went to the City and attended the celebration, but we forgot not God nor His goodness for He is delivering us from bondage and is giving us a land of peace and plenty.

On Sunday we attended meeting in the Tabernacle then on Monday began laying adobes, making wall, haying, watering crops. This week we gave this, our labors, for a sample that every day and every week is occupied in hard labor.

On August the 1st, 1854, I have now built one house 42 feet long with three rooms, a fireplace and each room ready for plastering in the city of Farmington. We are performing a large amount of labor all for Zion getting along very well with our wall building and also with our farming.

August 31st. I fitted out one man and sent him as teamster to meet and help in the Mormon immigrations as we had covenanted with the Lord in the temple walls in Nauvoo that we would never cease our exertions until all the poor were gathered out and up into the great gathering place. I suppose at the time the covenant was made it meant the last poor

left in Nauvoo. But it seems according to the wording of our promise before God that we are bound until the last poor Saint is gathered out of Babylon. Now the Lord will require at our hands that we keep our covenants and the law of tithing and the word of wisdom strictly as we shall not retain a blessing and standing in the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. Now I think it will certainly come to that for the Lord says that all that can be shaken will be shaken and I greatly fear that such ones will be shook out and be lost.

October the 6th, 1854. Attended conference, a very interesting conference for this meeting President Brigham Young said thus, that Adam and Eve were the names of the first man and woman of every earth that was ever organized and that Adam and Eve were the natural father and mother of every spirit that comes to this planet or that receives tabernacles on this planet. Consequently, we are brothers and sisters and that Adam was God our eternal father. This, as Brother Heber remarked, was letting the cat out of the bag and it came to pass I believed every word for I remember saying to the brethren at a meeting of high priests in Nauvoo while I was speaking to them under the influence of the spirit, I remarked then, that our father Adam had many wives and that Eve was only one of them and that she was our mother and that she was the mother of the inhabitants of this earth, and I believe that also. But behold, there were some that did

not believe, saying of the Prophet Brigham, even our beloved Brother Orson Pratt told me he did not believe it. He said he could prove by the scriptures it was not correct.

I felt very sorry to hear professor Orson Pratt say that. I felt he should apostatize but I prayed for him that he might endure unto the end, for I saw verily it was possible that great men might fall. I remember Apostle John E. Page. I saw him take from his pocket a plug of tobacco and bite off a mouthful and put it back. It surprised me. I said old chap you will apostatize. But, still I really hoped he would not, but he is gone and I am very sorry for the poor man.

November 3rd. Our daughter Josephine is taken very sick. We anointed her and blessed her in the name of the Lord. There is much sickness and death in the city nowadays.

November 12th. Sunday, attended meeting at our school house. I received an appointment to preach there next Sabbath.

November 13th. Our little daughter Josephine is better and my wife Laurinda was the mother of another fine daughter, mother and child doing very well. But the child only lived five days. She took very sick, I blessed her and dedicated her unto God and gave her the name of Mary.

November 23rd, 1854. Little Mary passed away at three o'clock this morning. We were pained to part with her, but Thy will be done, oh Lord.

Sunday, I preached to the Saints to a good house, had good liberty and blessed the Saints. We were plowing and sowing wheat and hauling timber and making shingles and serving the Lord with all our might and strength and our God is with us, His Saints. George A. Smith came up and preached to us on Sunday evening. I gave \$25 in the poor fund.

December 25th, 1854. Christmas, we enjoyed ourselves very much in the dance in our school house. The ward recreating themselves all week in parties and dancing. Moved my log house and put it up and put on the roof this week. Oliver and James Wilcox helped me. It is very fine weather now but there was some snow the first of the month.

### *January 1855*

January the 1st, 1855. A very windy day. We attended a fine party at our schoolhouse. It was snowing that evening and makes good sleighing. We moved our log cabins this week and put them up for stables to make our animals comfortable. We are now located in the city of Farmington with a dirt wall partly around us to protect us, but whether it does or not there is one thing certain, it doth snow. Our willingness to obey counsel whether or not verily there is one thing more that is certain. This is the kingdom of God and this is the people

of God and also this and here are the priesthood of God and by that priesthood this people are counseled, governed and controlled and by this priesthood the Saints of these valleys, the mountains and the timbers, the waters, the rocks are blessed. Yea, all things are blessed to the people of God only so that His people do love and fear God and keep His commandments for surely as the prophet David said, happy is that people which are in such a case. Their granaries shall be full affording all manner of store. Their children shall be as olive plants around their tables. Their streets shall be full of innocent boys and girls playing, for their God is the Lord and blessed be His name forever.

January 21st, 1855. We attended meeting in the Tabernacle and heard Elder Kimball preach, very interesting. Saw Elder James Works just returned from a long mission in England and on Monday called my three wives together as there were some feelings between them. I labored with them in the spirit of meekness. Advised them some and understanding and forgiveness and union was affected. How thankful to our God. How happy we feel when we are united and one.

February 1st. Attended fast meeting. A good turn out, blessing of children, the Saints very faithful in their meetings.

February 11th, Sunday, Brothers John and Lorenzo Snow preached good to us today. Very fine weather.

February 15th. The presidents of Seventies visited with us, namely Joseph Young, John Pack, Jacob Gates. We had a good time and on the 16th they advanced J. S. Smith, president of the 40th Quorum of Seventies and two of my sons and one son-in-law were received into and ordained the 40th Quorum of Seventies, namely Oliver and Ebenezer and James Wilcox. Brother C. C. Rich came and we got up a good party.

February 18th, 1855. My birthday, 43 years old today. It seems that I am making very poor progress but have obtained favor of the Lord. He has given me four wives and fifteen children and a very good understanding in the things of God, a firm and unshaken faith in the gospel of the Son of God for which I feel very thankful to God. My prayers are that I may continue in favor of the Lord and never get out of His favor.

February 25th. Attended meeting and Brother Daniel A. Miller and I preached to the Saints. Had a very good liberty and our people turned out well to the meetings these days.

March 4th. This Sunday we heard President Kimball preach and prophesy in round numbers. Said he to the brethren, now is the time to lay up grain for a famine would surely come and that this people should be like Joseph of old that was sold into Egypt and that they should yet buy the world with grain and stock.



April 5th, 1855. Attended fast meeting. John W. Hess being appointed bishop, chose and ordained his counselors Thomas S. Smith and James Leatherhead and they were voted in.

April 6th, 1855. Attended conference. Many good things were taught, the most interesting was that President Brigham Young said the key was turned. The gospel should be sent to the lost sheep of the House of Israel and there were a good many elders called to take missions to the House of Joseph at this conference.

April 15th. Sunday, in the Tabernacle heard Brother Brigham preach on the Word of Wisdom urging the necessity of laying the foundation for a long lived posterity.

On Sunday the 22nd a choir was organized today and Brother Cotrel was elected chorister. We practiced a bit after meeting. On Sunday May 5th a meeting was held in the Tabernacle which I attended with my three wives. Some of the missionaries start on their eastern missions this week and the President and company are visiting the missions south. Grasshoppers are visiting us in great abundance these days.

[Editor's Note: On the dates of May 14th through June 17th, July 1st and onto September 7th Joseph Lee enters some personal but not historically important events in his journal.]

September 7th, 1855 – At one o'clock in the morning I received my eighth daughter, a beautiful babe by Laurinda, my third wife. Mother and child are doing well and father very

happy and not only able to get about but is obliged to get about pretty lively to get the bread and meat and shoes and stockings for so many mothers and children. This especially when the grasshoppers and cattle eat and destroy all or nearly all our wheat, potatoes and corn like they have this year. The Lord only knows what will be next year when they have laid their eggs, yea filled the ground full of them, but I do rejoice greatly in the Holy One of Israel, believing He will deliver us and feed us if need be as well as He did the children of Israel in Moses day. I took tithing melons, butter and eggs to the city tithing office. We do pay our tithing because it is the Law of God, therefore we can claim a right to enter into the House of the Lord and when we build holy temples we may enter into the House of God and inasmuch as we keep strictly the Word of Wisdom and all the commandments we will have the right to claim all the blessings pertaining to that holy house, our washings and anointings, sealings, first and second, and ordinations for ourselves and for our dead and an inheritance in Zion. And also we may with propriety claim life until we have filled the measure of our creation, performed our mission, according to the program that we were sent here to do.

[Editor's note: We skip now to the 14th of October.]

On Saturday, the 14th of October, very early in the morning, I anointed and laid hands on Ebenezer, he was sick. Oliver helped me to load tithing hay and I anointed and blessed his

wife also, as she expected to be confined and I started for town but was greatly bothered on the way. It seemed the devil was determined to hinder me that I should not get back. Ebenezer came down for a doctor but could get none. He told me that Lucy was very sick if yet alive. I had promised her she should have strength to be delivered and that she should live and that she and her offspring should be blessed. But soon after I left in the morning she was taken with fits of seizures and continued to have very hard ones until about 12 o'clock at night. She gave birth to a son while she was insensible. I came home late in the night, my son Oliver was in the yard looking for me to come. He was weeping and wringing his hands, saying Lucy was dying. She would die, oh Father Lucy will die, she is dying. I said to him, hush my son. She will not die yet and I walked immediately into the house which was full of very serious, solemn persons. I said not a word to anyone but went directly to her bedside and in the name of the Lord Jesus laid my hands upon her head and in His all prevailing name and by the authority of the holy priesthood, commanded the fitts to leave and the destroyer to cease to grasp and to depart from this house and to my daughter Lucy to be healed and strengthened and be comforted that she and her little son should be blessed. Immediately the fitts left and she rallied and was both surprised and pleased to see her child. It was a nice, beautiful child and through

the blessings of God, Lucy is recovering slowly, but gaining. But her child is sickly. Anna Maria is also gaining very fast and all feel very thankful and humble. Oliver and Lucy's little son passed away. I blessed him before he died on Thursday, October 18th. Also this evening, I blessed our little daughter Laurinda Eliza, a spritely and beautiful child. Oliver and Lucy's little son I gave the name of Oliver Joseph. His stay was short with us, only five days but still long enough to receive a good home and blessing, a perfect tabernacle, tasted death and went by—even to his Father in Heaven, to him that gave him life, to live again forever.

Now my oldest son, Oliver Lee, and my eldest daughter, Anna Maria, were both married the same day, November 20th, 1854. Oliver Lee, to Lucy Miller and Anna Maria to James Wilcox. October 7th, 1855, was the day Anna Maria's first child was born. It was a fine son, also was named James Henry.

On the 20th and 21st of October we attended a two days meeting, a conference at our place, a very precious interesting meeting. Some of the twelve, namely Parley and Orson Pratt, Wilford Woodruff, Erastus Snow and Uncle John and Lorenzo Young, able and spirited preachers entertained us Farmington folks away up exceedingly. We enjoyed it much. Apostle E. Snow notified me that he wanted me to be in readiness to start for Iron County the first day of November as I was expected to

go and take George A. Smith and Elder Snow was interested in the iron manufacture at Cedar, Iron County.

Our children are getting better. Ebenezer is laboring hard getting out our winter's wood and shingle logs. I am extra busy in building a house, doing falls work and preparing for a trip south as I have a large interest in Iron County. There I have a wife, more precious than fine gold and children, more precious than rubies and also many friends, brothers and sisters, that I had formed an acquaintance with and an attachment unto.

On November 2nd and 3rd we were visited with a remarkably heavy wind, unroofing the house and scattering our hay with dreadful fury. It took us one day to gather hay that was scattered, shucking com, digging potatoes, hewing and putting up joists, fixing my carriage for a start.

On November 7th, Monday, I started for Iron County and for some cause Brother George could not go, but he wanted me to take his wife [Eliza?] to Parowan, as she was here on a visit. But, when we arrived in the city Brother Kay Wood was not ready to go yet and he and Brother Snow wished me to wait for them a few days, so that I returned and helped some more on my house until Monday the 12th.

On the 12th I drove to the city, stayed two or three days waiting for Brother Snow and Kay Wood then went to Provo and stopped there several days, stopped with George A. family,

Lucy and Hannah, and while there I received a patriarchal blessing. In it was said that I was chosen to lead a company of valiant men up to redeem Zion and that my wives should bless me and a great many other good things. I felt very good under it, yea, very good indeed. I remarked to some brethren with me, that that blessing was worth a large farm and a thousand yoke of oxen. So you see I was well paid for waiting a few days and Brother Kay Wood [possibly Haywood] came along. He said Brother Snow was not yet ready and that we should not wait any longer for him and that he should not go any farther than Salt Creek, and as Brother George A. had been sick he did not go with us.

I took Zilpha and her little daughter and trudged along. Was blessed of the Lord. Met some of our brethren, a good company of Lamanites, we were some scared but not hurt, thank the Lord. They were very good-natured, and we gave them some biscuits and they let us pass and we went on our way rejoicing and were prospered exceedingly.

We arrived at Fillmore on Sunday morning, November 25th, put up with commandments of God.

Snows, storms and cold weather are increasing upon us very fast. We are gathering our stock and branding and sending them on the range to live or to die as best they can. I heard that my sheep were dying, starving to death.

On January 3rd went to South Weber and hauled home 22 head of sheep. Our people are digging a canal to bring the waters of Jordan to Salt Lake City. I have one man working on it.

*June 1856*

On January 13th, 1856 Sunday, attended meeting. On the 16th I took my black horses and turned them out on the range at the Hooper Springs. It is very cold and foggy weather, we hope for warm but more cold comes.

January 12th, 1856. The perpetual immigration fund was legalized January 12th, 1856. We turn our stock, horned cattle and horses on the range hoping they may live as we have a considerable of stock, horses, cattle and sheep. But very little hay. Now the reason for our not having hay is because the grasshoppers had eaten it up during the last summer as they came in multitudes the summer before on wings and ate my wheat all up so that I did not thresh one bushel. They laid their eggs on the ground full of them and the next year they hatched out in great abundance. I planted my lots (as I had three of them) and the grasshoppers hatched and ate up everything that came up, weeds and all close to the ground. I planted a second time and again came they and ate everything again

and they ate our meadows and grain also but along in June they began to fly away and I planted my lots the third time.

I commenced the 22nd day of June and finished the 24th at dark planting corn and some melons and squash and they all came up quick and matured and this corn saved our lives, for in this summer the famine came for the winter of '55 and '56 that was what we called the hard winter and as the grasshoppers had eaten our grass and grain then the famine came upon us the second time and behold ye it was a very trying one indeed but the Lord saved us for He blessed what we had and it strengthened us and we lived and did not die, thank the Lord. But when I saw that I could not get any more than what I had, we placed ourselves upon half rations even upon half a pound of corn, oat, or wheat meat, bran and all. That was all that we had of bread kind and we had not till harvest. As I told my people that if we would come on half rations we should have bread all the time and so it was. We did not do without bread of some kind until a harvest but in the last winter we lost in horses and in cattle and sheep an estimated \$2000 and I came out in the spring poor in worrying and laboring in trying to save some stock but I felt to acknowledge the hand of God in it all. But I firmly resolved there and then to never be guilty of the like again that after this in the fall if I found that I had more stock than feed that



I certainly would dispose of them and sincerely hope I may always remember and do so.

I, Joseph L. Robinson, had been exercised for some time of the importance of more faithfully living my religion of Jesus Christ more faithfully than I had been doing but not so much as I have since the reformation which took place among the people through the preaching of President Jedediah M. Grant. His first meeting was held in Farmington at our courthouse where we had meetings, (as the people of the county had built a very good house and they gave the Farmington Ward the privilege of assisting to build it offering them the privilege of fitting up the upper room to hold meetings in and I as an individual placed \$40 in building materials in the same so that we had a very nice room). It was in this room that the greatest reformation that was ever got up in Utah and with the people of Farmington which spread through the length and breadth of the territory, reaching also into the old countries, but it rather was look and start in Kays Ward but it proved to be a very deep and pungent reformation. It started on the 17th and 18th of September 1856 and on the 19th in the meetings he weighed us in a balance and a great many were found wanting. Previously President Brigham Young did say there must be a reformation among the people called Latter-day Saints for the spirit of God moved upon him and he said I shall take my knapsack under my arm and I will travel through this

territory and preach repentance unto this people until they do repent. Behold ye that listen and repent did take that load off the shoulders of the President and he struck out in the name of the Lord and did preach repentance to the people with such tremendous power as we never heard any man before and behold ye he took such a load upon himself that he did use him up and as it is generally learned it did kill him.

More of this reformation hereafter, as there are some things we would note preceding this very important occurrence which took place. Verily, on the 1st day of March 1856 I commenced to weigh out to my family half the bread stuff as the famine must come so it did. On the 13th of April I with several others were baptized and we did prepare a place and start a prayer circle for the first time in the Farmington Ward and in the performance of this duty we felt ourselves greatly blessed of the Lord.

On May 8th, 1856 several of the Carson Valley missionaries stopped with us overnight as they were come to sell that valley but that proved a failure and on the 9th I went to the endowment house, the house of the Lord and I need to report that on the 17th of March [possibly 14th of March], 1856, my wife Lydia, several of my children received their endowments namely Oliver Lee and his wife and my daughter Anna Maria with her husband James Wilcox and my son Ebenezer J. and

they seemed to appreciate them very much. They considered these endowments as great blessings from their God.

June 1st, 1856. I started on a trip to Iron County expecting to fetch my family from there, but only brought our servant John back with me as we decided they (the family) would remain there until the next spring that they might take care of their crops they had had in.

I had a very pleasant trip, a good experience. I carried several passengers down and brought some back with me and traveled some with Apostle Parley P. Pratt and Elder Jacob Gates and heard them preach several times as they are very able, good preachers. It was a great treat. We were gone three weeks from home and found all well at home and I felt to rejoice and thank the Lord for His goodness and great loving kindness to me, unworthy me, as I am.

On September 4th, my son Ebenezer was called on a mission to Salmon River.

I desire to add more in respect to the great reformation with this people. As we stated, it commenced in Farmington on the 17th and on the 18th a host, of us were baptized for the remission of our sins and on the 19th we were confirmed. On the 21st, Sunday, we were at the Bowry in Salt Lake City where we heard the First Presidency preach to the Saints as we never had heard them before. They reproved the Saints with such sharpness for their sins and transgressions. Yea the

fiery darts from the Almighty were hurled at the center of the hearts of the people that pierced them to the very inmost soul. A reformation is decreed throughout the length and breadth of the territory. An important time and awful crisis had arrived for thus saith the Lord through His servants, the voice of the Holy Ghost, yea the voice of God unto this Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, they must repent of their sins and covenant anew before Him, confessing their faults and verily the people did repent, with weeping and as in dust, and ashes. Behold ye, when the criticism was put to the people it did disclose sins, wonders, that were heart sickening and we did not wonder that our great and good God could not and would not put up with the sins and transgressions of His people any longer. They must and should repent and do their first works, renew their covenants, and obtain forgiveness that His great peace and blessings might rest down upon the people. And so it was, even so for truly, this reformation was a deep and pungent and very extensive and the blessings and the peace of our God has rested down upon His people in a wonderful manner in that His people have been so marvelously preserved from the hands and power of our very bitter enemies who have, so diligently and ardently sought our destruction. There have been friends raised up unto us from time to time. Men of influence and power so that their (the enemies) well aimed and heavy blows have not taken effect to destroy this kingdom

and this people as they intended. But this people are becoming rich, spreading abroad, and building up in a wonderful manner. The waters are being greatly increased and the frost being withheld so that the land has produced very abundantly in all kinds of grain, fruits and vegetables, grasses and timbers in great abundance and also in flocks, herds and horses of the very best quality and in a thousand other things too numerous to mention. That is not all, only if this people shall continue faithful they shall never be destroyed, neither reprov'd but they shall continue and increase and improve and live forever. Now, all that our very bitter enemies could do is to hasten the work of God and drive His people to unite more closely together, to stir them up to greater diligence in keeping His holy commandments and also to the purifying of the Church, and cleansing it from unworthy members.

Also, in filling up their own cup of iniquity, which now nearly brims full, and after it shall run over it shall ignite and take fire and shall work a dreadful destruction and behold ye Babylon, the great, the mother of harlots, the whore of all the earth, shall fall and great and mighty shall be the fall thereof. Surely the kingdom of God that the prophet Daniel said should be set up, is now set up and it is not to be thrown down but will certainly grow into a great mountain and fill the whole earth and it shall grind Babylon together with all other kingdoms to powder, because it is the most righteous kingdom of God and

because of the great wickedness they (Babylon and all other kingdoms of the earth) have practiced and the large amount of innocent blood they have shed.

October 6, 1856. Our son Ebenezer, with several others, start on their Salmon River mission.

October 24th. This day Alva Foster, my brother-in-law, came to my house very sick with inflammatory rheumatism. He remained bad for about two weeks and then the Lord had mercy upon him and healed him up. He is a very good young man, a Latter-day Saint, a good mechanic and has been laboring for me doing the carpentry and joiner work on my house. He has obeyed the holy law so far and has married a wife, a very nice, amiable good looking young wife, and we hope all the good Lord will bless their union with a house full of good bright intelligent children.

The First Presidency and home missionaries are laboring hard to get the people to reform and live their holy religion, that they might escape the judgements of God and be prepared for the great things that await them. Our meetings are very spirited and interesting, but there are some questions put to the people, with commandment, that those that are guilty shall not partake of the sacrament. There were a great many that would not partake. The Presidency is determined on thorough reformation and that is a cause of great joy to me. I feel exceedingly happy. Also, we have a good, well attended

prayer circle in good running order. Brother Thomas Grover has fitted up a good room for that purpose which he graciously offers us where we hold our meetings at present. This is an exercise that I feel very much interested in.

November 30, 1856. We have sent a great many teams out to bring in our immigration people. The brethren of the handcart company have got in, some have died and some have frozen their feet. Their sufferings have been great but the Lord has greatly blessed them. We have felt very anxious about them we have prayed much for them and we felt very thankful to see so many of them alive.

And now I want to say a few words in truth with regard to myself. I had repented of my sins long before this reformation came to us and in fact many of them were never committed so much so that when we were weighed in balance I happened to come up right every time and when the criticism was applied and the questions put, my (conscience), every time, was not guilty and for that reason I feel exceedingly happy. Why was it that I was not guilty of the heinous sins that many had to plead guilty of? It was because I did always remember my prayers. I did see the seriousness of sin. I looked upon lying and upon stealing and upon bearing false witness and of seducing females and of committing adultery and of profane swearing, or drunkenness, all these things, I always looked upon to be very heinous sins. From my youth I always despised

them and I have always pled with and asked the Lord to watch over me and to help me to overcome the weaknesses of the flesh, the allurements of the devil and therefore the Lord has helped me. I do not attribute it to my own strength, but to the) goodness of God. I give him all the glory.

And now I will say a few words about for, and in behalf of, our very dear, and very much beloved brother, and President, Jedediah M. Grant. Truly he is a great and mighty man, one of the mightiest men that God ever had on this earth. He is sick but he took hold with such vigor, with such almighty power or with such exceeding great fervor in the ministry to wake up the people to realizing a sense of their true condition and the necessity of repentance. It has prostrated him on a sick bed and we fear it will take him from us entirely, our very dear brother Jeddy.

December 1st, 1856. This day, the great man Jedediah M. Grant has fallen to sleep. He passed away quietly, he is not dead but sleepeth, he liveth. We are very sorry to part with him but we cannot mourn for him because we know he is better off. We say that he will do us more good up there than he could here and that they did need him there and therefore they have taken him and will have plenty for him to do there. Yes, and for a thousand times more besides!

President Grant was buried on the Fourth. The reformation is progressing finely. I have visited Ogden and talked some



to the people, visited some with the Saints, heard some very excellent preaching and discover that the reformation is doing a great work there.

We take great, pleasure in our prayer circle meetings and we have great pleasure in attending all our meetings and we do attend them very punctually. My family is doing well. I feel so happy with them in my holy religion. Surely the Lord is with us we shall not want.

December 25th. We enjoyed the best Christmas that we ever did. Several of our children were with us. I turned one yoke of oxen and one pair of steers, two years old, in the Weber Canal and placed one cow in the poor fund, to help to gather the poor Saints.

### *January 1st, 1857*

January 1st, 1857. We attended fast meeting and had a good meeting. We feel so very happy we enjoy this new year very much. We feel and covenant with the Lord to try and live our holy religion and to keep a celestial law so far and good as we understand it. May God our Eternal Father help us to do so and that we may endure to the end.

May, 1857. The spring has opened up fine with an abundance of work, a plenty of work and we faithfully attend meetings on

the Sabbath and our prayers always. My beloved Susan from the South has come home again. She feels very happy and humbled. On Tuesday 26th, President Young (party) passed our home and Brother (Vance?) took William Burton to Parowan as he did not like to stay with us here.

·1857-1859·

## **The Utah War**

Difficulties with the U.S. Federal Government

George A. Smith and John Taylor returned from Washington. They reported that they achieved no admittance to the Union. The Gentiles are mad. They would like to kill the Mormons. At a convention of delegates which had met in Salt Lake had adopted a state constitution and had elected these two brethren as delegates to Washington to present their memorial for admission into the Union.

July 2nd, 1857. Brother Jay S. Smith returned home and Ebenezer will come soon. We had a fine rain today, our crops look well, our haying is on hand. Reports say that Uncle Sam (U.S.) is sending a company of troops here to set us to rights, but we have peace here and fine crops for which we

feel very thankful to our God whom we do both love and only fear him.

July 7th, 1857. We went into Weber Valley and gathered about eight bushels of sarvis berries. There are a large number of immigrants passing through to California in search of gold.

There is very much plain, sound preaching with us nowadays and our President has declared our independence and all the people say Amen and we think we will have it even if we have to fight for it.

September 3rd, 1857. Captain Vanfleet was detached by General [Hamey or Kamey] the great U.S. squaw killer to come here and purchase a small town and some lumber and feed for the mob and for their animals for the winter. President Young informed the gentlemen they could not come in here at all that if they would not admit us as a free and independent state, that we would be free anyway. He indicated that he had count the cost and Uncle Sam had not and that this detachment could not come in at all. He went away seemingly satisfied that they could not come in. He said he would use his influence to turn them back. (George T. Barnhish was sent with him to Washington to persuade them again to admit us as a state. If they will, all right, if not, we say we will be free or die trying, for we pray for freedom. Our church has been driven four times and the Lord says for us to assert our

rights, maintain our freedom and He will help us and we feel determined to do so.

September 23th, 1857. An express came into Salt Lake City, that the U.S. Army sent to Utah. The Army had got to Bridger and they were determined to come in and we, our people, are determined that they shall not come in at all and 500 men were dispatched to cooperate with those already out. All the men in the county are in readiness with their arms to go at a moment's warning.

October 1st, 1857. Oliver and James start today on their mission to Salmon River. There is now a considerable amount of sickness with our children. My daughter Anna Maria's little son died today (October 12th). He was sick but a few days. I have hauled two loads of wood for Bishop Hess for the poor and for the boys on duty. The mob is now on Hams Fork. Our boys have burned 70 odd wagons with all their loading and have found 700 or 800 head of cattle and have driven them into Salt Lake City, or into the valley. We are very busy getting wood, and helping the threshing for our soldier boys. There is plenty of hard work.

November 3rd. It commenced raining. Rained very hard then snowed and began blowing for over a week. Our enemies are yet at Hams Fork waiting for Lieutenant Johnson to come and tell them what to do, for they dare not undertake to

come in for our boys are prepared to use them rough in Echo Canyon.

Sunday, November 8th. I was called to address the Saints which I did upon the subject of the redemption of Zion and upon the signs of the times. We hope in God and expect prevail over our enemies. Colonel Johnson has come and he swears he will come in at all hazards. The boys are called out to meet them if they dare presume to come in. I have sent two loads of hay to the city for the soldier boys. It is very cold.

November 16th. I went into the canyon and got a load of wood for the public. My son Ebenezer came home this evening, built a grainery and got my oxen shod this week.

Sunday, 22nd. At eight o'clock this morning the Bishop called all the men and boys together and organized them into a company to get wood, do the threshing and other public work.

November, 1857. Henry W. Miller was elected to take charge of the men in doing public work and I together with Brother Rose were called upon to meet with and assist Brother Miller to organize the men. We organized the city in two divisions and we appointed Joseph Aldrige first captain of the first division with two assistants and I was appointed to take charge of the same, to receive the wood and to keep an account of the same. Brother Card, captain second division, and twenty teams and teamsters to each division and these two divisions are for

getting wood. We met again in the evening and divided the city into two districts and appointed Brother Ervin and Birk to take charge of the same, giving them all the remainder of names to do the threshing and cutting wood for the widows and doing other public duties about home.

December 1st, 1857. Laurinda, my third wife, was delivered of a fine boy, weighed nine pounds. He was born at half past nine a.m. Oh Lord, let him live and become a good substantial man in Israel.

December 3rd. The new governor has sent a proclamation ordering all organized armed men sent home. Our enemies are at Bridger and all our soldiers of this county, or nearly all, came home today. We were one week in the canyon piling wood, halting tithing hay, and laboring excessive hard and faithfully, the Lord with us.

### *January 1st, 1858*

January 1st, 1858. I and my family arose early this morning and washed our bodies clean with pure water and we prayed to Almighty God, our Heavenly Father, in the name of Jesus for ourselves, our friends, our brethren and sisters and for all Israel, for these peaceful valleys, and for these mountains and for everything there unto pertaining. I did dedicate myself and all of my family unto the Lord together with these valleys and

mountains and rocks, streams of water and fountains, timbers unto the Lord my God for the benefit of His people even for all the Saints of the Most High. We got a good breakfast, fed our animals well and had a very pleasant, beautiful day outside and indoors and in the evening the high priests got up a good supper and we enjoyed ourselves remarkably well and had a right down good day of it, thank the Lord.

January 3rd. Sunday, attended meeting and prayer circle in the afternoon and at half past six in the evening, Lydia, my fourth wife, bore to me a son, weighed eight pounds, a fine child, my tenth son born to me and my twentieth child, may the blessings of Almighty God rest upon the lad and upon my all, Amen.

January 20th–26th, 1858. The thrasher came to my place and thrashed my wheat, 215 bushels this last year, thank the Lord we are likely to have bread. On the 26th our legislature has decided to raise 1000 well armed men for a standing army and our ward has to raise 38 and I have to fit out one man. I have bought two ponies for that purpose. I have to pay one yoke of oxen and two cows for these. It will be quite a stunt for me, but we will try to obey orders and the Lord will bless his servants. We have raised a considerable of flax. I am working hard getting it out and preparing it for weaving. My second wife, Susan, is a weaver and my other wives are good spinners and so we have to make our cloth and the Lord does

bless us abundantly, for the elements are full of silks and fine linen and wool and everything that we need. So if we will call upon the name of the Lord and labor diligently we may have an abundance of everything we need.

January 31st. Elder Gates and Clements came and preached to us in the day and Apostle Orson Pratt and E. T. Benson in the evening. They have just returned from a mission in England. They report that the world is dead on Mormons.

February 1st. I have bought two ponies for this is my business. I gave one yoke of oxen and two cows for them, the boys that were called to go in the army were enrolled Tuesday the 4th. James Simmons came to me and said the Bishop wanted me to fit him out instead of Jesse Clark. He came to live with me the last of the month. He was a good boy but poor. I had to dress him up from the stump. I purchased for him a saddle, bridle, arms and ammunition, blankets, clothing and everything. It was very extensive. We felt to do all we could well and we did so cheerfully. We thought it was the best thing and wisest thing for us to do as the Lord has said to us to assert our rights and stand up for them like men of God. If we do so the Lord will help us as we have been driven so many times, robbed and murdered for no offense whatsoever only for our holy religion. Even if our religion was man made like others, we knew that we had a constitution and a right to enjoy it as well as any and all others. We have faith in the



Lord. We said we would never come under the Gentile yoke again, unless we were obliged to do so.

March 1st, 1858. The boys are plowing, the weather fine, sowing some wheat this week. It has been a very fine winter. We are laboring exceedingly hard and getting out wood from the canyons for the widows and the families of the poor. The boys furnish them hay and are going around looking after the poor and needy and taking care of their wants. I was appointed a teacher and one of the council and was determined it would be never said in truth that I had been slack in performing my public duties.

March 8th, Monday, bad news came this morning from the north. The Indians have fallen upon the Salmon River Mission and have slaughtered two of our boys, namely George McBride and James Miller and have crippled some five or six others namely Thomas S. Smith and Oliver Lee Robinson, my eldest son, Brothers Shurtleff, Jonathan Walch and Andrew Grigley and drove off the most of their stock. President Young sent 100 or 200 men to their assistance. A company of 50 was sent from this place, Farmington. My son Ebenezer went for one of them. They left there on Friday the 12th.

Colonel Cane came in from Washington and went immediately to the United States Army at Bridger. They are swearing mad. They say they will fight, that war is declared and that they have a treaty with the Indians, that they have

hired them and given them arms and ammunition and that they will come in. Brother Brigham says that we should put no more wheat up. He says that the north of Utah must immediately move south and if the soldiers do come in that we will burn every house and everything that we can burn. I was called upon with my team to go north for wagons with Brother Austin.

April 1st, 1858. Near Bear River the people in all the settlements north are making and repairing wagons and some are moving south. We are at work hard repairing and making beds. We attend the meetings every Sabbath, sent a load of wheat to the city Saturday the 3rd and we were informed that the Davis County people were to stop at Salt Lake City. The Salmon River Mission came in on April 12th and took a load of wheat to the city. On the 15th we took one load of wheat and one of potatoes down making flour boxes, repairing roads and harness this week. The people are moving very fast from the north, working on wagons.

May 2nd, I moved Lydia to the city. Took two loads of wheat to Springville and got it plowed. Came home on the 6th and found a dreadful wind blowing.

May 12th, Tuesday. Oliver and James Wilcox start to move south. Oliver's mother goes with them and her little son Joseph Elijah also. On the 14th I took two loads of wheat and

one team to the city. We are repairing fences and fixing our wagons for moving south.

On May 18th, 1858, we left Farmington with three wagons loaded heavy with Brother Madsen and family to take them to Provo together with our stock. They were all started but one team that I was to drive. I left alone, went into my house and did solemnly and mightily humble myself upon my knees before God of my fathers and in the name of the Lord Jesus did I supplicate His throne of grace in my own behalf and in behalf of my individual family that we might be preserved from material harm and accident and that we might be blessed in our move south, that we might please God and gain an experience which should be of great worth to us and that my name might be glorified and that this church, thy covenant people might receive thy holy protection. I there and then dedicated myself and my house, my orchard and farm and my improvements altogether to my God into His hands for safekeeping that inasmuch as the word had come from our President to set the torch to my house and property, Oh Israel, I felt that I would and could do so with great cheerfulness. I did make the sacrifice cheerfully, without any reservation whatsoever.

I did try to put up my fence around my farm and orchard that in case the Lord should send us back, we might have something to come to. I did remember the prophecy that I had made in Nauvoo after the martyrdom of the Prophets Joseph

and Hyrum that this Church and people should be permitted to build our temple and therein get our endowments, and then our God should take this, His people in mass, and lead them out of bondage into a goodly land among the Lamanites away into the Rocky Mountains and that He should plant them there and that He should greatly bless and increase them there, and that they should never come under the Gentile yoke again. Now, thinks I, it certainly must turn in our favor and God shall surely work with us and bring us out victorious. So, make it be then.

We drove to Salt Lake City and remained there four days through a dreadful storm of wind and dust. We improved the time I fitted or ringed two wheels and had three tires set and my stout horses shod, a thousand dollar horse, one that I had raised.

On the 23rd we left the city, camped on the Jordan. The next day we drove around the point of the mountain and camped in Utah Valley. My son Ebenezer came to us. He is driving a team for Captain Hooper.

On Tuesday the 24th, we camped on the Provo bench. We are getting along very well. On Wednesday the 25th we moved on and passed through Provo, left Brother Madsen and family there, saw Brother Shurtleff at the mouth of Provo Canyon and had quite a talk with him.

May 27th, 1858. President Brigham Young and suit [party] are at Provo. We passed through Springville and Spanish Fork getting along fine by stopping at [Pond Town?]. There we had a good camp and facilities. The boys went into the canyon for wood and poles and gathered willows, fixed a shade and cut some hay for my horse. On the 30th we returned for loading and brought two loads which we left with Brother Alphonso Green, of American Fork and returned to fanning and brought two heavy loads home.

On June 10th, we went to Willow Creek in Juab Valley where the farming ward had mostly gathered. My sons Oliver and James Wilcox, my first wife Maria were there. They were in very good health and spirits—and several of their cattle and sheep had died, supposed to be poisoned. Now the Saints were trying to take care of themselves, their families, their animals and all they had and to serve the Lord the best they could, anxiously waiting, praying, watching the movements of the waters. They hoped—and then again they hardly dared to hope. We hitched up and moved our camp a little west of Payson in a grassy field in Bunkers Camp. I went to Willow Creek and brought up my beloved wife Maria. We received tidings that sounds encouraging for our return home again, so that I sent George and William to Farmington to plant some seeds and put up a fence and do some hoeing. I took my wife Susan to Brother Whipple's in Provo and made than a good visit and left

her with a friend in Battle Creek. I went to Cottonwood and got a load of wheat, ground it, packed my flour and went to Salt Lake City. There I learned the facts that peace is declared and our people pardoned. President Young and Kimball will return home. They propose that the Saints return—all that wish to. In returning home from the city we met the President's family and many others going to their homes again. We returned home, found it all well. William came with teams, we loaded up and started for home in Farmington.

July the 6th, 1858. We start back, thank the Lord our God, we go by Goshen, the west side of Utah Lake. We saw some of the soldiers as we crossed the Jordan and had some talk with some of them. They thought our people very presumptuous to defy the United States. We told them we could not do any better, we meant all that we said. We got along very well. The Saints are gathering back to their homes, feeling very thankful that our God was with them, these His people and that He was fighting their battles for them and we had obtained a great victory, for the stand our President had taken, for his firmness, for his wise movements and counsels and that we were permitted to return to our homes. We returned with great joy and satisfaction and arrived at our homes with all of our stock.

July 1858. We find our home, our fences, our wheat and hay and good crop of flax, with plenty of weeds, but in as

good or in a better condition than we expected. George had put up fences, planted some grain hoed some potatoes and had commenced haying. We felt so thankful to our God, the spirit of God moved upon me and I proceeded forth within it in a solemn and humble manner.

I, Joseph L. Robinson, did dedicate myself, my family, my houses. my orchard, my fields, crops, wheat, hay, flax and garden and all the lands that I have a right to claim, a right to cultivate, with all our domestic animals, with all we have and are unto the Lord our God exclusively for His service and kingdom forever and ever, Amen, and even so Amen. May God Almighty bless His Saints and especially our President.

On Sunday the 18th we went to meeting once more and Elder Joseph Young preached to us. On the 21st I went to Gardner's Mill and brought home some flour and one sheep we had left there.

There are plenty of goods and Gentiles in Salt Lake City now. No meetings are held there at present, the Presidency keep very close just now. It seems to be their policy that they should do so, but it is quite a trial for the people. The soldiers have gone to Rush Valley and located about 40 miles from Salt Lake City, as it was agreed that they should do so. They are quiet but it sticks in their minds (crops) they do not like it, but the Lord has a hook in their jaws. They cannot fall upon this people and destroy them. We have confidence in

our governor. He will take care of His elect. The new governor has come in, he has succeeded our governor Brigham Young. His name is Cumming, a very good, honorable man. He has become a substantial friend to President Young and our people. He is doing all he can for us. We feel to thank God and take courage, our God is for us.

August 8th, we attend meeting, but all public meetings are stopped all over the territory. We are laboring very hard trying and praying, haying and harvesting our wheat, putting our flax, we have a fine crop off that as well as of wheat and hay. I was very diligent in the spring before we moved away. I sowed some wheat, some flax and kept up the fence while most of the people put in no seed, put up no fence and consequently they had no such crops or hay to harvest.

September 6th, I left for Payson for the flour and things we had left at the American Fork. There were many trains of goods and government supplies for the soldiers and all the more soldiers are coming. I came home Sunday evening and found one of my children very sick. I anointed him with holy oil and laid my hands on him and the Lord healed him for which, and for all blessings, I feel to thank the Lord, my God.

We are laboring very hard. We bought two yokes of oxen and the boys are getting out wood, building one loom. We have a weaver with us.



October 4th, we are preparing to build adobe house this fall for Saint Maria, my first wife.

We have our wheat thrashed and have 140 bushels this season, a very good crop, thank God.

October 6th we attend conference in the Tabernacle. The bishops and the presidents of the several quorums with the bishops counselors were in attendance and we had a rich time for two days. My wife Maria went with me on a visit to the City and on the 10th attended meeting in our courthouse. President Joseph Young and Amasa Lyman preached to us. It seems so good to go and hear the gospel preached again. I have been several Sundays at home reading and writing and rejoicing and praising the Lord my God for his marvelous goodness toward His people.

November 4th, George and the girls have gone to the city. I went into the Weber Valley and stayed overnight with Brother Higley, and bought a house and farm of Gordon Begsted. I am building another house this fall.

November the 13th, Saturday, we went to conference, Susan and Laurinda, with me. Presidents Young and Heber were there. They gave us much rich instruction and counsel. There were many cut off from the Church at this conference. The conference adjourned until the sixth of April next year.

[Editor's note: Grandfather now tells of finishing his house and moving his wife and family into the same. He records that they were

able to move out of their log house but that they had an abundance of labor to perform. He writes about the work they had done when they first came to the valley of the Great Salt Lake in 1848 and the various homes that had been built in North Canyon, on the Jordan and then on their farm in Farmington. He also refers to the great battle which the Lord had fought for them and the great sacrifice they had made in their move south and their return again and the building of school houses, meeting houses, tabernacles and temples and also in supporting the families and furnishing the means of hundreds of our elders that we kept constantly in the mission field. He writes about the fear and concern they had as Johnson's Army moved in but that the supplies they brought were a great blessing to the people and ends this section with a statement that "surely our God, moves in a mysterious way His wonders to perform." Then continuing, Great Grandfather records:]

The Lord did move upon a man to come from the United States, round by California and over the mountains through the dead of winter, if possible to save the shedding of blood and to save the army of the United States, and to save the credit of the United States. Also he went out to the army and did persuade the newly appointed governor to come right in with him, without arms, or guard. He, Governor Cumming, did so. He was warmly and very respectably received and he became the warm friend of our people. This wonderful man, Colonel Cane, went back to Washington and he did persuade

the government to immediately send a peace commission to treat with our people, bringing a full and free pardon for all our sins on the condition that we would let their army come in and pass through Salt Lake City and that they should not disturb a thing belonging to the Mormons. Also, that they should camp some 40 miles from Salt Lake City—all which they did. The treaty was entered into and it was agreed that our people should not be molested by them and that our people might return and we did.

And also, in the great amount of time, men and teams and the thousands upon thousands of dollars in money we do expend yearly in gathering the poor from the old countries. And now verily in the performance of all this vast amount of labor, this people must be supported by our Great God, that is my testimony.

We are laboring incessantly hard all this fall and winter. We attend our meetings and all our duties faithfully and in so doing we have great joy for we do know our God is with his people. Even now, the wheat that I sowed in Weber Valley on the 19th of November last, was covered with snow until spring and as the snows melted in the spring it laid under the water for three weeks and then the water receded and the wheat lived, came up and it made a very good crop. Brother Higby told me that all the people of that neighborhood were watching that piece of wheat, for as yet they had not fairly

tested that valley for raising wheat. But I had faith in God that he would certainly bless that valley and it came to pass that as I had bought a farm there I wished to put a part of my family there and it was decided that Laurinda, my third wife, would go there with her little family.

*May 19th, 1859*

We started May 19th, 1859, stopped at Brother Simmons place at the mouth of Weber Canyon. My family did stay there for two or three weeks because of high water, the Weber River being very high. And when we did get up it was very dangerous. We had to cross the river in a raft but the Lord helped us and the brethren with their boat helped us over. We thanked them very much. My wife was very courageous. She packed her little son, then only over a year old, over a rough place at the devil's gate. The water in the road was such that she had to spring from rock to rock. I admired her ambition, she was a hero. But, we got through all right and moved into our log cabin, keeping house.

Now I wish to say a few words with regard to this great move and its effects, and some other things. Now many of this people had never been driven, although many of us had been driven from Nauvoo. Now, the Lord would know whether the Latter-day Saints would make the sacrifice that He required

of them in the first place, to obey counsel, which was to resist a formidable army of the United States and to say with determination that they should not come into Utah. And then to make a bold resistance with a formidable army, to burn their wagons with ropes and supplies, and to drive in hundreds of their cattle and make use of them, and to assert our rights as American citizens. To declare our independence, that inasmuch as they would not admit us into the Union as a free and independent state, that we would be free or fight. Then to show them we meant what we said, we were counseled to move, leave our homes, and go south with the understanding that when the word came, to set the torch to our houses, and burn everything that we could. To take cash and our provisions with us so we did move. We left our homes cheerfully with a firm determination that if our President said so, to set the torch, we would burn everything we did not take with us. (Surely the God, our Lord and Savior did test us.)

April 8th, 1859. I bought and brought home and set 52 apple trees and I have 52 peach trees set in my orchard. We now have planted a good orchard and we do hope to enjoy our homes and to be permitted to eat the fruit of our orchard, for the Lord told me that we might now build permanently. Nevertheless, there are reports that the soldiers in Camp Floyd say they will come into Salt Lake and lay it as in ashes and take Brigham and some of the authorities to try them

for treason. These reports are that our mighty judges are conspiring with Johnson to bring his army into Salt Lake and they would take the leaders of our Church and they would try them for treason and they are teasing Governor Gunning to let them come in, but he would not consent. Yet, they were determined to come in spite of him. The Governor came to President Young and Heber and said to them, what shall we do. They are determined to come in. Brigham said to Governor Gunning, you tell Colonel Johnson if he does come in he shall be used up. Tell him we will call out the Nauvoo Legion and they shall be used up. But verily they did not come in and I guess it was for the best that they did not come, the best for both parties.

·1859–1876·

## **Mature Years**

Farms in Mountain Green & Farmington

Marries Mary Taylor

Wives Lydia, Maria & Susan pass away

[Editor's note: Great Grandfather now records some events of the winter of 1858–59.]

I find some things in my journal worthy of note that I had passed over. In December 1858, we were visited with a dreadful hard, cold mountain wind, unroofing houses, freezing some persons to death and many of our stock, doing a large amount of damage. We were very busy laboring with all our might. Christmas and the holy days came and we witnessed many things. We went to the city, enjoyed Christmas with some of our friends but found that the Gentiles were killing one or more of our police, some drunken, some talking of apostasy, some of going to California for gold, some to the states. But with we Mormons, all is well. We want nothing better. We rejoice greatly in it for it is most certainly true.

We held New Years with George [Slade?] family. We attended meeting in the Tabernacle, the first public meeting since we returned. Brothers Joseph Young, Jacob Gates, Jo-

seph Smith, held forth in forming doctrine and principles that were sublime. This caused us very much joy. Apostle C. C. Rich preached to us instructing us with a fine discourse.

Now surely the hand of God was visible in all this great movement. It shows us that our God will and can fight our battles for us. Also that we should not doubt and must obey counsel. That we should make the sacrifices as Abraham did, even the sacrifice that God should require at our hands. We made the sacrifice and it was accepted. He brought us back again and placed us in our homes and for a proof positive to me is that the Lord did tell me after we returned home. Said he, now you, my people may build permanently. This to me said that we might now expect to stay. The Lord will fight our battles for us. I did remember the prophecy that I did make in Nauvoo after the death of the prophets Joseph and Hyrum. I did say that after we should get our temple built and we should get our endowments, then that God would take his people west away into the Rocky Mountains and plant them in goodly land among the Lamanites and that He should bless and multiply them and that they should never come under the Gentile yoke again. Now, I want to say that Brigham Young was the man that brought this, God's people, out of bondage like as did Moses bring the children of Israel out of their Egyptian bondage. Even with a high hand and a stretched out arm hath



God Almighty brought this people out of bondage by the hand of Brigham Young, His mighty prophet, even so Amen.

*May 1860*

May, 1860. We planted our new farm in Weber Valley in Mountain Green, five miles. My wife Lydia bore a fine daughter, weighed eight and a half pounds. Mother and daughter are doing well. Our farm is about five miles from the mouth of the canyon, about 15 miles from Farmington, a nice, grassy, well watered valley with an abundance of wild fruit. We built a saw mill, a school house in this place and had a very good meeting and school in a few years at this very quiet settlement. With the help of my boys and with some hired help I carried on this farm and the one at Farmington also. We got along very well with an abundance of hard labor and the blessings of God upon our labors.

May 25th, 1860. I built there a new house and a large log barn rejoicing constantly in the holy one and it came to pass that my wife Laurinda gave birth to a pair of twin girls, two fine daughters of Zion. Mother and babes are doing well. We felt exceedingly thankful to the great giver of all good blessings. We blessed them, we said let them grow up and become the mothers of a great people.

November 4th, 1860. This evening, the spirit moved me to go out and have a season of prayer. I followed the promptings of the spirit. I went past my barn into my field. I fell upon my knees and did pray mightily to my God and He heard my supplications. He filled my soul with joy. I remained there for some length of time. I was standing upon my feet, gazing at the stars, admiring their beauty and order. I was exceedingly happy and verily the voice of the Lord came to me saying, you shall live and go up and help redeem Zion. You shall help to build that holy house, namely the temple of the living God upon the consecrated spot in Jackson County, Missouri. You shall enter into that house and see the face of the Father and live. You shall work in that house. He said to me so much and no more. Now verily there was no tongue that could describe the joy that filled my soul. I shouted and praised the Lord my God. I went directly to my house and a messenger was there for me. He said a man was dying. I went directly to the man, laid my hands upon him, rebuked the Destroyer and commanded him to arise. He was healed. And I felt as strong as a lion and my God was with me, even so amen.

January 11, 1860. The high priests were called together this evening and Gidden Brownwell was cut off from the Church. Bishop John Hess stated he had received word from President John Young that he wished him to take charge of the high priests in that ward, or appoint someone to do so. Joel

Ricks was elected president and Brother Pugh and myself his counselors, and a good humble childlike spirit prevailed in all the meeting seemingly to the perfect satisfaction of all the brethren. Some difficulties were settled and the brethren felt to forgive and bless each other and our meeting continued the next evening also.

February 18th, 1860. I, 48 years old, did enjoy a good supper, attended quorum meeting this evening and Brother Grover preached a continuation of the heavenly call and its effects and I did feel greatly revived in my spirit and wonderfully blessed and happy.

March 20th, a heavy snow fell. Hay is scarce and high and much stock dying but I have been very lucky, lost only two oxen, one sheep and one young calf.

April 1st, 1860, Maria and I took supper with our daughter, Anna Maria. May, 1860, my son Ebenezer and others start for California to get a threshing machine and other things. There is a great stir in Congress about polygamy. September 9th, we finish our mission and on the evening of the 10th was called to preach. September 10th, I blessed Lydia's little girl, we named her Emma Sophiah.

October 5th, I came down from Weber, drove my black horses to the fair and on October 6th attended conference. A very good meeting, I came home on the 9th. On the 22nd, Sunday, attended meeting in Weber Valley. President Farr

from Ogden was there and organized the valley by appointing Brother Peterson President.

October 23rd. Some of my little children are very sick and on Monday my little son George Alva died. He was two years, nine months old.

On Tuesday the 24th, little George Hadfield with a match set his father's and my stack of wheat a fire which was in Farmington. I had a large stack of very excellent wheat and his father a good stack, altogether worth \$500 or \$600. Brother Hadfield lived in my log house and had put his wheat by mine so as to thrash it when I did. I was in Weber at the time the machine was to come next day to thrash. I went down, heard the report, felt very bad but nothing could be done about it. As for the wheat, I was concerned. I naturally felt sorry for I supposed I would need all that I had to support all my large family. I had labored very hard for that wheat and had hired out much. I only wonder that there is not many times more houses and property burned the carelessness of parents leaving matches where little children can get them. But I felt that I must and would acknowledge the hand of God in all things. I felt and said, Father I thank thee that it is no worse.

I came home and found the neighbors had saved some of my wheat but it was so wet and smokey that it was only fit for

feed. Verily I say the Lord giveth and the Lord taketh away, blessed be the name of the Lord.

I buried my little son, George Alva, he had been sick for some time. I did blame myself for not staying and taking care of my dear little sick child. They said that several times before he died he had said where is my father, I want to see my father. I did regret very much that I did not stay with him. I felt ashamed on this occasion. I did ask my Father in Heaven to receive him unto Himself and for Jesus' sake to forgive us inasmuch as we, or either of us had done wrong. Surely an awful responsibility rests upon parents. It is their individual duty to use diligence and take special care of those heavenly treasures that the Lord doth commit to our care and unless we do so and live very near unto him, even to serve our God faithfully, we certainly will not be counted worthy to receive them again when they shall return to earth and raise them up, for surely somebody will have that job. Surely the Father loveth little children for of such is the kingdom of heaven, they are redeemed from the fall.

November 11th, I thrashed my grain and had 325 bushels in Weber Valley. We have our saw mill running and it is doing very well. We have our school house built and our big job of birch lumber out. I am getting out saw logs and the boys will build a log barn. We are doing a large amount of work and we attend all conferences.

On Sunday the 27th I preached to our people in our school house in Mountain Green and as a general rule we always attend our Sabbath meetings and always attend to our prayers, both secret and family prayers and always try to do right, but we found through the weakness of the flesh that we failed very much. But we repented every day and did obtain forgiveness and consequently we did receive and keep the holy spirit with us and that is why we were always so joyful and happy.

December 25th Christmas. This day I blessed our little twin girls, named them Netta and Rosetta. May they live forever.

### *January 1st, 1861*

January 1st, 1861. Our son Oliver and family got for us a royal good supper. We had a joyful time and hope the redemption of Zion will soon come for the southern states are seceding from the northern states and as our prophet Joseph prophesied, the wars will surely come upon this nation, human blood shall flow profusely and great shall be the distress of this nation and the judgement of God shall from time to time be poured out upon this people.

February 1861. Verily, and it shall come to pass, the Latter-day Saints shall step forward and save the Constitution from falling into the hands of other nations. That heavenly, inspired instrument, got up by the fathers of this republic, and by them,

independence was declared, which was maintained through the blessing of God and a mighty struggle in war which cost the shedding of much precious blood and many lives were sacrificed. Now the Constitution of these United States was inspired of God, consequently it was perfect. It surely did give to every man liberty to worship God just as he pleased. He could baptize for the remission of sins, or sprinkle or not baptize at all. He could receive by the commandment of God seven wives, or have no wife at all. He could fall down and worship a real god, or he might have no god at all. He could fall down under the wheels of his juggernaut, or sacrifice to idols, if he chose. So, he remains on his own dunghill. For surely the Constitution forbids Congress to make any law, to bind men's consciences or to prescribe rules for men to worship, if it were not so, this would not be a land of liberty for us, or for any other people, amen.

March, 1861. In this month I built a house in Weber Valley and hauled the rocks for under pinning and have the timbers for a barn in Farmington, sowing wheat and stock for our mill.

April 1st, I hired Brother Cornelius Evans, a very good man, for seven months, and also for the year.

April 6th, I went with my wives to conference and had a very enjoyable time. At this conference Brother Brigham gave to me a mission to go and bring my brother Ebenezer here.

Said he, you had better write to him first and then when I felt like it to go and fetch him and that I should be blessed of the Lord. He is off the track. He lives in the state of Iowa.

I will now relate a very remarkable dream I had one night in the city of Nauvoo. It was before the prophet Joseph's martyrdom. I dreamt that there was a very strict law passed and that a transgression of that law merited death. And presently, a charge was made and preferred against my brother E. Robinson, a court set, judgement rendered, that he was found guilty. The sentence of death was pronounced on him and that I was to be the executioner. Now, this was a great trial to me. I did not hesitate to obey the summons, but I thought he was more capable of doing good than I was and that if I were to die in his stead, I would prefer that. But, I was innocent, he was guilty, he must die.

Now this remarkable dream made a very deep and very serious impression on my mind. I felt very bad even to the shedding of tears. I felt, oh Lord, it is not so. Cannot I be excused?

The southern states are strengthening themselves against the northern and will soon be fighting and when this war will end, the Lord only knows. But we have peace in these valleys for the Lord is with us and He will sustain this His people at all hazards.

I received a letter from Susan in Iron County, all is well.



May 22nd, 1861. President Young and party start on a visiting trip south. I have written one letter to my brother E. Robinson. I have put in upwards of 20 acres in grain in Weber Valley, laboring incessantly hard.

June 8th. I preached to a very attentive congregation in the courthouse in Farmington. Brother Brigham and Parley returned, all is well. There is considerable sickness with us this spring and some deaths, mostly with children. There is great excitement and fighting in the war.

One, Joseph Morris, a pretended prophet, is creating an excitement and is gathering lots of Mormons into his fold, but we presume no Saints, their headquarters in south (blank torn page).

July 4th, I went with a part of my family to Salt Lake City, and attended a very interesting celebration in which the birthday of our nation was honorably and royally celebrated.

July 24th, we attended a celebration in Weber Valley with speeches, a good dinner and dance.

The wars are raging, many people are fleeing they think from trouble, they say our south? is all gone, we are left alone. Oh God, what shall we do? Have mercy on us. But, our country is envious. We have peace and quiet. There is a large immigration this season.

August 3rd, we attended a very interesting two days meetings held in Brother Thomas Grover's grove. The First Presidency and several of the Authorities were there and we received much valuable instructions, a very good meeting. We had peace and plenty. A fine crop of wheat and hay this year. My barns are built and a large amount of labor performed, which is marvelous in our eyes and for which we thank the Lord, our God.

October 8th. We attended a very interesting conference in which we agreed to send 200 or 300 families south to raise cotton, indigo and grapes. We have peace and quiet. My family is in very good health. We feel extremely well and very thankful to the great giver of all good. However, we have some trouble. The crickets and grasshoppers destroy our crops, several seasons and the fires and rains destroy part of our crops during two seasons and this fall the Indians stole four of my horses, two valuable black studs worth from \$500 to \$1000 and two large valuable young mares.

### *October 1862*

October, 1862. The United States is in a dreadful vice, being divided and fighting each other. I have written the second letter and sent to my brother Ebenezer. Our immigrations are coming in considerable this fall and our teams are returning

loaded with Saints. A large amount of rainy weather this fall. I am writing and getting letters and sending them to my family in the south.

I spent Christmas in Weber Valley and New Years in Farmington, it was raining most of the month.

February came in warm, the grass growing, cattle out feeding the second day of February but it has now commenced snowing which is continuing so that we had a long, hard winter and much stock died. But, I had plenty of feed and raised a fine crop of beautiful wheat in Weber Valley about 200 bushels. But, the rains came and wet the stacks so that we had got only about 30 bushels and the last fall my wheat in Farmington was burned, but still we lived and felt to thank the Lord because it was so well with us.

### *March 1863*

March, 1863. It is still snowing and raining, all this month. The stock is not doing well. The war is still raging and thousands are being killed.

Our territory is now organized as a state called Deseret, with Brigham Young for our governor. We hailed the day of our deliverance and our lit when our governors shall proceed from ourselves. The spirit, power and influence of Mormonism is spreading mightily in the earth and God is working marvelously

according to the predictions of the holy prophets. The Church has voted to send 300 teams to the states this year for the immigrating Saints.

May 1st, 1863, about 3 o'clock this morning Lydia, my fourth wife, bore me a son, weighed 10 pounds. A nice child.

The snows are melting and the sun shining, the rivers rising and flooding much land.

About the 20th of May, the Church teams start for the states. I send one yoke of oxen. The Weber River is several feet higher than ever before known. The prospects are favorable for an abundant harvest of all kinds.

June 13th and 14th. At this time, an army of our men surrounded the Morrisite Camp and a war is on hand. The camp had resisted the officers that were sent with a writ to bring them to justice but they showed fight and would not be taken prisoners, so that an army was sent to them and the remainder were taken prisoners. And in the fight, the two leaders, Joseph Morris and John Banks were killed. In my judgement, the most simple, unreasonable and foolish teachings and doctrine that I have ever heard were taught by these men. This was done by the authority of the United States. It looked bad but if they had let other people be alone and if they had not taught their wicked doctrines this trouble would not have developed.

I spent New Year's Day with Oliver and family. We had a fat turkey and a royal good dinner and felt very happy indeed.

April 4th, 5th. My wife has been very sick. On March 25th

[Editor's note: This is cassette number 21 and I am dictating from page 144 of Great Grandfather's journal. The writing here is very small and tight and it is difficult to read. In the previous dictation, I missed some important dates and shall fill in here.]

On the 18th of February my birthday was celebrated in Weber Valley. We had turkey, a very good dinner and a dance in the evening. I preached to the Saints in Weber Valley, returned to Farmington where I heard Elder Lyman preach. Lydia's children have the whooping cough and the baby is very sick. I have written a letter to Susan at Parowan and one to my son Ebenezer J. in California, and one to my brother Ebenezer in Iowa. I ask God, my Heavenly Father, to bless those boys and bring them home again.

March 25th, 1863, at about 4 o'clock, our little son Steven died. We felt very sad to have one of our little precious ones go and leave us, but we feel to say, the Lord giveth and the Lord taketh away and blessed be the name forever we do mourn for them.

On April 5th I attended a meeting in the city and heard our President Brigham Young preach. We take great delight in attending meetings and in hearing the prophets and apostles and elders preach the gospel of the Son of God. Even I, as weak as I am, do take great delight in bearing my testimony to

the truth and in sounding the gospel trump and preaching it to a dying world. I have many times felt full, even to overflowing with joy and thanksgiving.

We must be careful not to suffer ourselves to do anything unlawful, impure, unholy so that the spirit of God will be withdrawn from us. When that is withdrawn from a person, unless that person speedily repents and humbles him or herself mightily before the Lord and obtains forgiveness and does again receive and enjoy the holy spirit, unless this is the case, he will most assuredly apostatize. Jesus said, if a man looked on a woman lust after her he shall not have the spirit, he hath already denied the faith.

I received a good letter from my daughter in Iron County. They and our people are doing well there. I wrote and sent a letter to them and one to Brother Russels in Iron County.

On the 19th a span of my colts harnessed to my wagon ran furiously away with a little boy in the wagon. I cried and tried to stop the horses but seeing no mortal arm could help I did cry mightily unto the Lord my God to help me and he certainly did help me. The horses ran with all might through rough ravines and threw the boy up high and out unhurt. The wagons were steadied for they ran between a large rock and a log house just room for a wagon to go between, across a small creek and through brush and there was great danger of the wagon breaking and killing both the little boy and the

horses, but just before they came to a precipice on a smooth piece of ground they both stopped as quick seemingly as if they had been shot. They never stirred until I came to them. Nothing was broken and no one was hurt.

August 30th, 1863. John [Sevet?] and I are talking of putting up a water wheel and a molasses mill on my lot near my house as there is a good water fall, but Brother Ezra Clark went to Bishop John Hess and talked with him on the subject and Bishop Hess wrote a note to Brother Sevet telling him, or advising him to desist and not put the molasses mill on my lot but to run it by horsepower or put it somewhere else. Directly after this, Brother Clark put up a water wheel and molasses mill on his place a few rods by my water privilege as there is a sufficient fall for a water wheel at each place, but I found no fault. Some thought it did not look very good. I think it savors some of selfishness and shows weakness of the flesh.

On October 6th we attended conference in Salt Lake City and now are making our molasses at Brother Sevet's by horse power. We made 130 gallons.

I went to Cache Valley and bought some wheat and hauled it to Salt Lake City to pay for building our meetinghouse. Reports say that Ebenezer is on his way home from California with his wife.

*January 1st, 1864*

January 1st, 1864. My son Ebenezer returned this evening from California with his wife Cloe. We hailed them with great joy, so very glad to see and embrace our son again as he has been gone for some time. He has found and got to himself a nice looking and smart little wife and we congratulate them in the enjoyment of each other and we do wish them much joy with long life and many good children which may God grant.

On January 8th I took Laurinda to Salt Lake City and with our friends attended a party in the 17th Ward assembly hall and I think I never enjoyed a dance so well before nor since. President Joseph Young presided and I danced with two of Brother Jesse Harvey's wives. They were such good dancers and with several of the sisters, it was to me so rich.

January 9th and 10th, 1864. This Saturday and Sunday was the dedication of our new meetinghouse in Farmington. The First Presidency and some of the Twelve were with us. We have a good house, the Lord helped us to build it and we did hear from our presidency and the apostles some very sound and first class preaching to christen our new house. We enjoyed our meeting so very much, the spirit of God has been on several occasions poured out upon our President Brigham in preaching to us in Farmington. He said it was easy to preach there. He said it must be there were some extra good spirits



there and whether he meant of old or at the present time he did not say, but I can say that he did preach to us some wonderful good, rich, extremely interesting sermons. We are being considerably waked up here in Farmington in religious matters. We do feel so very thankful to Almighty God for his great love he has for his people, for his wonderful compassion he has and does manifest toward his Saints. The pouring out of his spirit upon the Saints and the blessings to them in such a wonderful manner, spiritually and temporally, surely he holds his people as in the hollow of his hand. Oh how we do love him and how we ought to do his will and keep all his commandments.

January 31st. We attend meetings, very nice sleighing all this month.

February 4th, 1864, about 4 o'clock this morning my wife Lydia was delivered of a fine son. So the good Mormons will build up the kingdom with all their might to do what the prophets say.

We had some very heavy winds this month and had to put our stock into the barn and let them eat for if we put any hay out it all would be blown away before the animals could touch it.

February 18th, my birthday, I am 53 today and went to Farmington thrashing wheat. Ebenezer moved into his own house. He has a smart little wife. Thursday I blessed my little

son William (Lanster), Lydia's son, a nice promising child, let him live oh Lord and not die.

### *September 1865*

[Editor's note: From March 28th, 1864 to September 1865 Great Grandfather condenses his history into one paragraph on one-half page of his journal, page 148. He writes about his visit to Cache Valley to buy some wheat, taking Laurinda with him. Tells about meetings and conferences attended and work on his farm and on 30 days of work on a Weber ditch. He sent some things to his wife Susan and daughter Mary in Parowan and bought a stove for \$25 and sent it to his wife Susan in Parowan. He writes about the wars still going on in the states and indicates that a great many missionaries are called to go to Dixie and to the Colorado to form settlements.]

Farmington, Davis County, September 3rd, 1865. I, Joseph L. Robinson, leave my home with my horses and carriage to take a Dixie trip with President Brigham Young and company. I take Elder Wilford Woodruff, one of the Twelve Apostles, a very interesting, sociable, good man. He is a good company, a holy man of God. He also takes his little daughter Bula, she wanted to go with him.

I took two of my wives to Salt Lake City, Laurinda and Lydia, on a visit and from there I took Lydia's mother Foster down to Grafton Dixie to leave with her children there.

I drove to Lehi, we find the President and company there with a meeting. We stopped with Sister Hatch, her husband is on a mission to England. We were treated so very kindly and in the evening such beautiful music, it was so sweet and delightful. I should have said, Elder Woodruff took me to his beautiful orchard on his farm south of the city. He has a good variety of fruit, a beautiful orchard and they loaded us down with very choice fruit. We took some fruit with us to eat, had breakfast with him there and drove to Lehi. From there we crossed the Jordan River west of Utah Lake. I drove about 25 miles, halted too late at a lone house. When I drove up Brother Brigham was standing looking at us. He says to me, Joseph, you have great, big horses. Where did you get such great big horses? I said I raised them, that is the kind I raise, I said Brother Brigham, do you remember, I well remember, that you blessed me once when I let Brother Jedediah Grant have my pet, favorite horse for \$100 late in the fall for him to cross the plains when just before, only a few days before, I had been offered over \$200 in good pay by the California gold mine immigrants and you asked me what did you ask him for your horse. I replied, \$100, only what he was worth in ordinary times. You said that is right, Brother Joseph, you shall be blessed, God shall bless you. So you see he has blessed me with some of the royal family of horses.

From this place it was 15 miles to Goshun. He drove that 15 in one hour, and 30 minutes. I kept up with them. I saw he liked to make a big drive once in a while, then he would laugh about it. He held a meeting at Goshun. He chided the people there. He said you have apparently a good country here and why don't you build good houses and set out good orchards and show that you are somebody and that you expect to stay. He talked very kind and good to them, the fact was learned that there was a spirit with them, a portion wanted to build a town some distance from that and that they were nearly evenly divided. It seems that was the cause the President talked good to them. He advised them by all means to hang together. He thought they had better stop there but he proposed that they should obey the counsel of their President and build where he said. He wanted them to say whether we will or we won't. They did not say that night. But the next morning we drove a little distance. We came to a large high gate and upon the beams above it was written in large capital letters, WE WILL.

The brethren were pleased. We drove to Nephi, a very nice town. They have a fine meetinghouse, a meeting was called at 4 o'clock and they were praised for their taste, enterprise and industry. He blessed them.

We stopped with my brother-in-law, Alva Foster, he has a good family. They treated us well. We had good music here.

They have a good brass band, they discoursed choice music for us.

Now we found on this entire trip that the people had built good houses and good fences and had set good orchards and vineyards. Also from almost every town, before we arrived at a proper distance out, we would be met by an escort. They did manifest and show one and great respect to our President and to the priesthood of Almighty God, and well they should for verily I say unto you that since Jesus Christ's day or before his day there never have had greater or better men who have graced the footstool of Almighty God, than Joseph Smith and President Brigham Young. We might say in truth and with great propriety, many of the apostles of the Lamb and presidents and patriarchs and high counselors, and behold ye, the elders of Israel, the great and mighty work they have already performed. It is marvelous in our eyes. And also the great and marvelous work the Lord through His servants the prophets hath set upon their shoulders to perform in this dispensation of the fullness of times. The bishops also, what an enormous load is laid upon their shoulders and what an amount of patience and firmness, perseverance, diligence and charity they will be obliged to possess if they perform their labors and work acceptable to God.

September 7th, 1865. We drove to Round Valley facing a heavy south wind and just this evening the wind changed to

the north and it is snowing some. I took some cold. Brother Woodruff was rather feeble. We stopped with Brother Payne. We held a meeting in the evening. Some valuable and timely instructions were given to the people of this place. We drove to Cedar Springs and took dinner with Brother Johnson. He has a fine orchard there. These are the springs I named Cedar Springs when we first went to Little Salt Lake to establish a colony there.

We drove up to the beautiful city of Fillmore. They have a nice town, some splendid orchards. The President held a meeting and in the evening they gave us a good party and a dance. I had the privilege to and did dance with two young ladies, the daughters of Sister Eliza Daisy Gibs. She was an old acquaintance way back in the state of New York, real friends, a good family.

We held two meetings here and also in Beaver. They had in Beaver been visited with a severe frost doing them much damage.

On Tuesday the 12th we drove to Parowan and found a great improvement. Found my family well except the measles. I was very glad to see them.

On the 13th the President held two meetings. We drove to Cedar City and stopped with Brother Isaac Waite and had a meeting in the evening, the Lord with us.

On the 14th we drove to Tokersville, Dixie and put up with Brother [Milaraly?]. Here, we had our fill with grapes and enjoyed them very much. This is a nice thrifty little town and they treat us very kindly. Here I left Mother Foster as she would be taken up to Grafton where two of her daughters were living a few miles up the river.

On the 15th we drove to Dixie, passed through several pretty towns and took dinner with Henry [Heiman?]. He lives in the city of Washington. a beautiful city six miles from St. George. Here we found John L. Lee and James Pace and several of our old Nauvoo brethren. We arrived in St. George at five o'clock just in time to witness the rich products of Dixie in their fair as it had not yet closed. There were rich specimens of the products of Dixie Land. We put up with Brother Copeland and family and by them we were very kindly entertained during our stay there. They have a wall around a beautiful plantation. They have been there about three years. They have shade trees, orchards and vineyards and other things which denotes a settlement of from ten to twenty years at least.

Well, St. George is a large and beautiful city, as large as any one except Salt Lake City. It is kind of an S form, upwards of two miles long, a beautiful city. The inhabitants are very industrious. They have done a vast amount of labor. Most of my old Nauvoo people, I find more of them here than in all of the settlements in the mountains put together. On Saturday

the 16th we attended a meeting through the day and a free dance in the evening, a very good dance and on Sunday two very good meetings. We enjoyed ourselves very well for the Lord, our God was with us. We put up with Brother McMillen who treated us very kindly. On the 19th we held two meetings in this place. I was called upon to speak in the forenoon and had a good meeting. I blessed Elder Woodruff and he felt poorly, but much better. On the 20th we drove through sand and over rocks into Harmony and put up with the President at that place. Brother Brigham came and ate breakfast with us, he stayed over night with John D. Lee. A meeting was held at four o'clock yesterday and I saw many of our old acquaintances in this place. This is a very rich little valley.

On the 21st we drove over to Cedar City and they made for us a public dinner and a fine dance in the evening. On the 22nd Bishop Lunt presided and we held two meetings here. We stopped with Isaac Halt and drove to Parowan meeting in the evening, and found my daughter Mary Jane. I visited some of my friends there and we drove to Beaver, stopped with the Cartwright family and on Sunday held two meetings there. Brother Brigham blessed the people there. We drove on the 26th to Corn Creek and put up with Peter Robinson, meeting in the evening. On the 27th we drove to Fillmore, took breakfast, held one meeting and drove to Round Valley. We then drove to Springville, stopped with Brother and Sister



RoyTins, and drove to Provo and went to their fair. They had a very fine exhibition of the fruits and the energy and the economy of the state of Utah.

We drove on to Lehi and had a public dinner there for the President and his company. We drove up to a brother who said to us that dinner was waiting and for us to go in and that he would feed our horses. When we came out this brother showed me what he had fed my horses. It was about a half bushel of heavy black oats with a considerable amount of wheat in them and one of the horses had eaten most of it. I was scared for fear it might kill her but we drove to Salt Lake, but the one horse took sick before we arrive to Brother Woodruff's. But she, the horse, brought him home but that was all she ever did. She died that night. They were a pair of very large and fine and valuable young mares that I had raised. Apostle Charles C. Rich was looking at them when he was on the Sevier River. He said my team was the best in the outfit. He said they were worth \$500. So I said thank the Lord that we got home all right only minus one \$250 mare, but we had a good time, thank the most high God for his mercies and his kindness with us forever.

[EDITOR'S NOTE: On page 148 of J.L.R.'s journal he indicates that he will later add some material from dates October 1864 to September 1865. This material was added on page 153 of his journal, as follows:

]

October 6th, 1864. We will now continue the subject as it was left on page 148 of this date, as I have found that portion of my journal that had got misplaced when I sketched out the lines of that Dixie trip. A warehouse has been established on the Colorado and it is calculated that our immigration and freight will come that way in the future. This has now come and I have purchased for myself a first class wagon and harness. On November 30th, went to the city, got my outfit for purposing to go right on to make this southern trip but the snows and cold weather set in so that I did abandon the idea of going until some future time.

December 1st. It is very cold and snowing. I returned to Farmington and on the 3rd took a load of hay to the city. It is worth \$15 a ton now and I beheld a site in that city that I never beheld before. So many people, so many buildings going up, business so lively, stores in abundance, so many goods, cotton goods, and groceries very high. The First Presidency and Twelve and some of the brethren have been holding two days meetings all over the territory this last summer laboring with and preaching to the people to try to get them to lay up grain. They are laboring with the people to save their grain. They organized a convention and set a price upon the products of the valley.

I brought up some of the young people from Salt Lake City and took up to Weber Valley for Christmas. My son Oliver and

son-in-law James Wilcox with their wives came also. We had roast turkey, a splendid supper and a royal party, a regular good time, thank the Lord.

April, 1865. It continues being very cold. We attend conference, much very rich instruction and sweet interesting conference. Some missionaries are being sent to Europe and Scandinavia and the Islands. The wars are still raging in the south and the north are taking many cities from the south and causing great destruction of property and murdering each other by the thousands.

I advertized some stray cattle that had wintered in Weber Valley and took a load of hay to Salt Lake and found the stores and shops all shut up and dressed in mourning for the death of President Lincoln and Secretary Seward which were assassinated the evening before and they died this morning about nine o'clock. Seward's son and a number of others were mortally wounded and surely the judgements of God must and will be poured out on the ungodly nation of very wicked Gentiles for they have murdered our prophets and rejected the holy gospel of the Son of God. They have assassinated our president and secretary and others and they are at war one with another and murdering one another by the thousands, even a million and undoubtedly will murder many more. Must they not be looked after? Yes, surely, in the very far distant wars shall be poured out upon them and rivers of blood shall

drench the earth and wo be unto them for they shall perish and famines and pestilence shall be poured out upon them and also dreadful destructive earthquakes shall be poured out and whirlwinds and devouring fires shall be poured out upon them with other judgements until they are washed away that there shall not be but few then left to mourn their death.

April 16th, 1865. Amasa Simon [could be Lyman] preached in Farmington and in his discourse he said some persons, did charge a great many things to the devil. He said there is no devil, only what there is in you or in the people. Also in the course of his remarks he said there was no more virtue in the blood of Christ than there was in the blood of any other good man. Verily I did know at the time and do know now that those assertions were false. To believe or to admit them would be synonymous to rejecting the gospel of salvation altogether. I was very much surprised to hear such assertions but having such confidence in him I did not for a moment suppose that he meant that, but I thought he supposed the people were charging the devil with too much and that they were depending too much upon the blood of Jesus Christ, so that he leaned over too much the other way. For surely they would strike a death blow to two of the most cardinal points in the gospel. For if we should admit these things we might with the same propriety say that there is no god.

May 22nd, 1865. There were this day some strays sold at my place in Weber that I had wintered there and I bought seven of them. In this month, my daughter Mary Jane and Brother John West came from Parowan on his way to the Islands as he had been called on a mission to go there. He asked me for my daughter for she would not marry him or any other man without the consent of her father. I gave my consent and they were sealed in the endowment house in Salt Lake City and she stopped with us until August. She returned to Parowan.

The wars have abated in the states. This season we have had good peace and great prosperity in and with this people in these valleys for these great blessings we feel very thankful to the great giver of all good even to God.

July 14th, 1865. On this day I married my daughter Janeva to Biram Bybe, a young man of Mountain Green, Weber Valley. May the Lord bless my daughters and their companions. May they be very fruitful and happy and live long and have many children. Those, were two of our very choice daughters, daughters of Zion. The oldest of the two, Jane Janeva, was born in Beaver Creek Indian territory July 14th, 1848 upon our road to these valleys. Mary Jane was born October 24th, 1848 in Great Salt Lake Valley. Their husbands, to appearance, are honorable, good upright young men. We pray for them that they may be successfully preserved in life, in peace

and in happiness and that they may be fruitful, raise up good families that shall be honorable in Israel.

September 1865. This is a month that that I made the Dixie trip the history of which commenced on page 148.

[Editor's note: In the next few paragraphs J.L.R. records in his journal the work that faced him when he returned from his Dixie trip and the production of his crops both in Weber and in Farmington. He also writes that he had word from his daughter in Parowan that she is the mother of a fine son a also some things about Indian troubles in the south.]

November, 1865. The weather is fine with some snow and rain. We have plenty of work. We are hauling a considerable amount of grain out east and bringing in coal. My boys are a great help to me. We are building a fine school house near us in Farmington and a good road in Weber Canyon.

### *February 1867*

On the 4th of February, 1867, Mary Taylor was sealed to me, formerly the wife of Brother [Simmons Levey?]. The same month I moved her to my place in Weber Valley as we had moved Laurinda to Farmington. We have had a very hard winter.

Spring, 1867. We put in a fine crop in Weber Valley but the grasshoppers came again this season and destroyed almost

all our crop. In this we did thank God that it was no worse and acknowledged his hand.

Some brethren have explored the Hooper Range near the Great Salt Lake ten miles southwest of Ogden City, a large farming community. Thomas Reed, and father Garner, William Garner's father, they have surveyed a canal to take the water from Weber River a little below Ogden City. I have concluded to turn in and help open the canal and make me a farm there. I have put a good force on that canal, the first best working team on the canal. I put on three good workers, [Dealveret?] Joseph, and Nathan. I furnished them with tent, tools and provisions and we drew some land to make us some farms there and the Lord worked with us, he did help us, he hath remained with us. We do labor for Zion. We do labor with all our might for Zion to build up the kingdom of our God on the earth. It is and it was and it always must be the kingdom of God or nothing with us for we do know that what the world calls Mormonism is the fine, the genuine, the holy, the everlasting gospel of the Son of God, that same gospel that John the Revelator saw an holy angel flying through the midst of heaven to earth, that he did commit the same to man or to men on the earth. That gospel is, or shall be preached to every nation under heaven and when that is accomplished our Savior said the end should, or shall, come.

Now the question will arise with some, the end of what? If Jesus meant the end of the world, then that would seem to conflict with other scriptures for we do understand the scriptures to say that Jesus Christ did and should come into the world at the meridian or middle of time. Then, according to that, the end of the world will not come for at least two or three thousand years. Yet, for the Savior is to come and reign with and over his people for one thousand years yet and then after the thousand years are ended, then Satan is to be let loose to range and go forth upon this earth for probably one or two thousand years until the people become wicked or until the last half of time is filled. For the scriptures are very explicit that this earth shall die, the end thereof shall come, it shall be cleansed by fire. This old earth shall pass away and it shall be resurrected again and there shall be a new heaven and a new earth wherein shall dwell righteousness. It shall surely then and forever become a fit, a pleasant, a heavenly habitation for the millions to dwell upon. Even so with man. As Jesus told Nicodemus, that man had to be born of the water and of the spirit or he could in no wise enter into the kingdom of God. Now there is an exact pattern that this, our mother earth sets for man to follow. Or rather the great Creator of this mighty universe has caused her to set for man an exact pattern. This mighty earth has been baptized, emerged in water for the remission of all her sins and she has to be also baptized or



emerged in fire and the Holy Ghost. That is also to die and be quickened and resurrected and become a clean, pure, heaven and earth that she may be prepared to take her place at the head of all of the celestial worlds of our Father's kingdoms. For surely, as she has occupied the lowest, in this important probation state, and as she has become the mother of the son of God and also the mother of the greatest and most intelligent spirits of our Father's. She also has had to drink the blood of all of those holy innocent men, or some of them at least, so the celestial law will require that she and they that have gone or descended below all things shall surely be raised above all things. So verily man, in order to inherit even this earth, will have to repent of all his sins and become a true believer in the Lord Jesus Christ and be baptized, emerged in water for the remission of his sins by a man having authority from Jesus Christ and that same authority must be by his hands upon his head and in the name of Jesus Christ confirmed a member of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, or Former-day Saints and give unto him the Holy Ghost. That man shall have to, not only think, and say that he has received the Holy Ghost but he must positively be baptized with fire and the Holy Ghost and become cleansed from all his sins and then he must keep the faith by obeying the law of the gospel enduring even to the end of his probationary state or else he cannot, he shall not, enter into the holy city of eternal life

even that new Jerusalem which shall come down from God out of heaven which shall ever remain upon this, glorified earth when it, the earth, shall become as a sea of glass, celestial pure, glorified like it shall be.

And now, my beloved friend, if you, or I cannot or do not fill the bill according to the pattern then surely you or I will have to enter into some other kingdom, or lesser kingdom of glory or of no kingdom at all as the case may be, amen.

Now with regard to the end that Jesus said should come, well, the scriptures are extremely plain and pointed with regard to Gentile rule. Their time must be set and when that set time expires certainly the Lord should have to organize that the gospel shall be preached to every nation under heaven that the end may come.

April, 1867. The end of what? Surely the end of Gentile reign on this earth. They, our brethren the Gentiles, must and probably have all the time, or nearly so, that was granted unto them in the great program got up by the gods when they sat in council and decided where and when the earth should be located and of the peopling of the same. The set time when the seven or the great dispensations of the gospel should be committed to man on this earth. The times when, and who were to head those important dispensations and of the great changes and revelations that should take place, the dividing of the earth, the mighty deluge, the baptism of this earth

and the destruction of all the wicked at that time as well as the time of the second coming of the Lord Jesus Christ. The time set for the fullness of the Gentiles to come in, when and where the great and the grand council of Father Adam and his wise council shall sit, when they shall commit the kingdom to the people of the Saints of the Most High, when the grand restoration of this earth shall take place, the mighty waters be driven into the north country where they belong, when Zion and Jerusalem, the eastern and western continents shall come together, even the land given to Abraham, all the land that was given to Joseph through Jacob his father, North and South America shall be married. These and a thousand other things that the prophets have said about the restoration of all things spoken of by the holy prophets since the world began. For surely all things that pertaineth unto this earth and also of man for when their sanctification and glorification is effected, then surely their restoration is completed to the glory of God. When there shall be no more use or labor for the devil and his angels for death and hell and the grave when as the Lord will, they may be dispensed with then they may be destroyed even according to the scriptures.

As we said, I did move Mary, my fifth wife with her family into my house at Mountain Green and we put in a nice crop on that place. But the grasshoppers came this year also and

almost destroyed our entire crop. We let her farm at the mouth of the canyon for this year.

Now verily, it did come to pass that I labored extremely hard and had to struggle and contrive to support five families. I did take this last one with five children, all from virtual poverty, to the shame of her former man, the father of their five children. I will say that when I took the family on my hands all their individual clothing, their bedding, and the household furniture, cooking utensils, all put together would not have brought \$15. I will say that I did not take her because (humanly desirous). Brother Brigham Young did say that some men took more wives because they were pernicious and we do never understand and know verily that polygamy is a holy institution and that certainly it is a pure principle that did emanate from the gods and that it was for the purpose of raising up seed unto the Lord. Also we know that any man that enters into that holy order on any other principle but with an eye single to the glory of God, that he is damned. The Lord did certainly bless me this much, and more also, that before I ever took a second wife I did know also that had not God commanded me I never should have taken a second wife. You will say why did you take this one? You will not believe me when I do tell you the truth which is that this the Lord told me if that man, her husband Brother [Simmons?] died that I should have to take the family on my hands to take care of

them. I secretly said, or felt rather, how can I, with all the families that I have upon my hands, how can I do it? And I can honestly say that I did plead with the Lord and pray more earnestly to God for that man that he might be healed and live to take care of his own family. But at this time, the Lord heeded me not, die he would, and die he did probably one year or more before this as I was travelling past their house I was called in. His first wife and some of her family were there to see him die. They expected him every minute that he would die. His head was as large as two heads and almost as red as blood, sick with irrecipolous. I had faith, I told him in the name of the Lord he should live and that he should be healed. He was healed. I told him to get up and tend to his business and worship God.

Verily, the Lord saw that I was a little thoughtful. He took me back several years to Nauvoo times before the death of our venerable prophet Joseph Smith. I shall never forget the night, nor what the Lord did tell unto me. The company with me had all retired to rest. The spirit constrained me that I must go out into the [field] and have a season of prayer. I was obedient to the call, remained out for some hours and prayed and shouted and praised the Lord and became wonderfully happy. I was standing upon my feet gazing at the stars, admiring their beauty and order and there the voice of the good shepherd said unto me; inasmuch as you will do

all you can in the times of your poverty for the building up of the kingdom of God upon the earth, the time shall come when you shall become rich in gold and in silver, in houses and in lands, in horses and in chariots, in silks and in satins. In flocks and in herds and in servants and housemaids. Well these were all mentioned over and as they were mentioned they did all glisten with exceeding luster and richness before my eyes. I rejoiced greatly for I knew verily these words and promises were from God and my rejoicing was mixed with wonder and astonishment. This promise with the condition was brought before me. The Lord said to me, I will be with you, I will help you. I said in my heart I said, enough Lord I will do all thou requirest of me on these conditions. Be then, with me and bless me and I will forever be thine. And it came to pass that my feelings were so drawn out toward them that after this I found myself saying that I would not take millions of dollars for her and I would work my fingernails off to support her and her children. So you may judge why I took her and I will say that I never was sorry but, on the other hand, was always glad.

While I am upon this subject, I will say what wives I have had all the Lord did give them unto me and I do feel so very thankful unto him for each and every one of them and also for every precious son and daughter of Zion that our God has

so graciously given or rather lent unto us—his precious sons and daughters.

I do certainly consider them, these wives and children, the richest and greatest blessings that God ever bestowed on man. So, that man does prove himself worthy to hold them, yes in every particular worthy to hold them through time and eternity. That man's happiness and fullness of glory is made sure unto him this is the blessing of the eternal life.

*February 1868*

February, 1868. On the 16th, my wife Mary gave birth to a fine son. We called his name Lee Sidwell. He was born in Mountain Green. Mother and child doing well. We say that the blessings of God rest upon this lad... Let him grow up before thee and live and become a mighty man in Israel.

I will now write a bit of her history, a very few of the words that she related to me sometime after she was married to me. She said it was some time or months after Brother Simmons was buried one evening she felt very poor and lonesome. She said, oh, Lord, what will become of me, what shall I do? And the voice of the Good Shepherd came, kneel down and pray, wash your body clean with pure water and then anoint yourself all over with consecrated oil. She did so. Her children were all asleep and then she bowed down before the Lord and did

humbly supplicate his throne for mercy and that she might receive forgiveness of all her sins and that He would pour out of His holy spirit upon her even the spirit of prayer. She felt exceedingly humble before the Lord. She told the Lord she would give unto Him all her children and that she would do all that she could to teach them in the ways of the Lord. That she wanted Him to send her a man that she could live happy with in time and in eternity, and that she would faithfully serve him the remainder of her days.

She said that within a few days after this prayer, she heard a wagon coming from the canyon. She looked out and it was myself, alone in the wagon. And she said such feelings came over her that she never felt before in her life so that she could not take her eyes off of that man till he had gone out of sight over the hill.

She said after that day that it would be of no use for any other man to seek her hand, for she would want her hand and body to go with her heart. There is one thing she told me, a request that she made of the Lord in her prayer and supplication that God would sanctify her and make her like she was when she left her father's house.

The man also, did pray much unto the Lord that he might know the will of God and that he might be enabled to do it and only that the consequences be what they might. For when the doctrine and principle of plural marriage was revealed unto



me from heaven, the straight and narrow path was presented before me as vivid as lightening and the Lord God did say unto me that any man that enters into the holy order or any other principle but with an eye single to the glory of God, he, that man is damned. This caused me to fear, quake and tremble before the Lord God when I heard this declaration from His mouth and saw before me the way was so straight and so very narrow that leadeth to life eternal. So that I dare not, I would not take to myself a plural wife unless I did know it was with the commandment of God. Indeed, I never did take one or either of them only with an eye single to the glory of God and consequently upon that score I am clean before the Lord. I am under no condemnation. I do feel justified before my God, which thought and knowledge affords me great joy and satisfaction. I am exceedingly happy in my Redeemer for I do know that He liveth and because He lives I shall live also.

February 12th, 1868. This day, I with three of my wives, namely Maria, Laurinda, and Lydia, we received our second endowments in the endowment house in Salt Lake City. We do receive it as a very distinguished favor and a wonderful blessing from heaven to get our second anointments under the hands of the servants of God in the holy priesthood. We rejoiced greatly and were exceedingly happy. Praise God.

February 16th, Sunday morning. At half past eleven, Mary was delivered of a fine son at ten and a half pounds weight.

We feel to implore the blessings of God upon all of our children. We receive them as very high prizes from heaven.

April 6th, 1868. I removed my family from Mountain Green to our little place at the mouth of Weber Canyon. The grasshoppers are very severe on our crops this year.

April 6th, 1868. We attend General Conference at the large tabernacle in Salt Lake City. As usual, a very large assemblage of Saints, or Mormons rather. Would be to God that they were all Saints. Jesus said, by their fruits ye shall know them. He said again that half of the virgins were or would be found foolish, the Lord help us.

We received very good instructions and we do esteem these things of more value or of far greater worth than gold and silver or the world's goods, for we both love and fear God.

And it came to pass that I did build a good rock house on this place. The little boys helped me some, but the Lord helped me a good deal more.

### *February 1869*

[Editor's note: From February 12th to October 16th J.L.R. writes about his farm and crops in Weber Canyon.)

October 16th, 1869. At this place, Mary gave birth to our second son, named Samuel. Let the spirit and the blessings of God rest upon the lad that he may become a great, a

wise and a holy prophet, a holy man of God. We drew some land in Hooper as we had a canal built to a large tract of land sufficient for a large settlement lying about ten miles southwest of Ogden near the Salt Lake.

### *October 1871*

October, 1871. I built two houses there and moved two of my wives, one on each farm, namely Lydia and Mary [Maria] so we did labor exceedingly hard in building, plowing, sowing, planting and we raised an abundance of grain, all for Zion, for surely that was what we labored for.

[Editor's note: This was after the facts writing and dates are a bit mixed up.]

October 1st, my wife Maria [Mary] gave birth to a fine daughter. We named her Harriet Ellis. We bless her that she may grow up a pure daughter of Zion. The blessing of God rest upon her and upon her good mother also.

November 9th, the ground was broken and the site was dedicated to God in St. George for a second temple in these mountains.

March 12th, 1869 is the date that our beloved daughter Lydia Ann died, age 13 and a few days old. She was an amiable, lovely, pure daughter of Zion. She was greatly beloved by her parents and friends, we mourn her loss or rather she the loss

of her society. We prayed for her, we teased the Lord to leave her with us but we had not faith of sufficient to hold her but we tried to feel resigned in the will of God. We said at that time, she should lose nothing and that she should become the wife of a noble Lord. We gave her unto a nice young man, by the name of Ezra James Clark. She has been sealed to him. He was on his way home returning from a preaching mission in old England, the eldest son of the honorable E. J. Clark of Farmington.

*September 25th, 1872*

September 25th, 1872, my fourth wife, Lydia Foster, departed this life. She dropped to sleep a few minutes before one o'clock this morning. I will here related some of the circumstances of her sickness and death. She was living in Hooper. She had borne to me six children, the youngest a son. She had taken a violent cold and was very sick for several days and Laurinda and Mary were both nursing her and this evening I had laid down to rest a little. She called me or sent for me to come and bless her that she might go to sleep. She told the women that she had promised to go at 12 o'clock and that I must get up and bless her that she might go, and I did give unto her a very peculiar blessing. She was told that an holy escort was in readiness to escort her to home, and that she should

go in peace and that she should be greatly blessed. This was about 12 o'clock. In a few minutes after she says to me, oh father, I cannot go to sleep what shall I do. I placed my hand upon her head and said, Lydia, close your eyes, be quiet and you shall go to sleep. In a moment she closed her eyes, she was very quiet and breathed for a few minutes. We watched her, but we noticed her breathing grew slower, shorter, and weaker. We called her and shook her but it made no difference. She went fast and easy to sleep and then she awoke no more. She looked very pleasant, but she was gone and had left us in a troublesome world, to do the best we could, but we felt and said farewell, dear and much beloved wife and sister and mother to a family of very precious and very interesting, lovely children. We mourn her loss, but we do rejoice in the great victory that she has achieved from the fact that she did receive the gospel, in that she did obtain favor of the Lord, in that she did receive the remission of her sins and that she became the plural and precious wife of an holy man of God. She did become the honorable mother of six bright, intelligent children, sons and daughters of Zion. She did keep the faith and died in peace, fell to sleep in Jesus. She did receive and was favored with an honorable escort with songs of joy and gladness unto God her father that she might join the Church triumphant and that she might join with them in the great labor in making preparation for their friends that are yet to

come and for the coming of the Lord and in preparing for the great marriage supper of the Lamb.

We took her and buried her in our burial ground in Farmington where several of our family were buried.

It might be interesting to relate a very singular phenomenon which was said to her on the same night that she died. There was an old gentleman that was camped about half a mile from our place. He was by some means awakened from his sleep. He started up his campfire and was sitting by it musing and reflecting and he told me that he heard such beautiful singing it was in the air over his head. It seemed to be coming in the direction from my house. He said he exclaimed, heavenly music, he said it was very heavenly music about 12 o'clock that night about the same hour that she died.

December 1st, 1872. We are under the painful necessity of recording the demise of my very precious and beloved wife Maria Wood, the choice of my youth. She was born December 5th, 1806 and she died December 1st, 1872. She was living and died in Farmington. She was not seriously sick but for a very few days and when the time came, she passed away easily without a struggle or a groan. She died as she had lived, a good, consistent Latter-day Saint. She was baptized into the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints April 1838. She was married to me on July 23rd, 1832 and she bore me five sons and two daughters. She loved her husband dearly and

was greatly devoted to her family. After she resolved to leave the world, take up the cross and go with me in the service of her God and become a despised Latter-day Saint or Mormon, she became very zealous and devoted to the Church and to the cause of God on the earth. She received great faith from and in God and she was many times healed and also she received many promises and communications from the Lord through the medium of the Holy Ghost.

I might with propriety mention of some few of them. After coming to Nauvoo, some time before the martyrdom of the Prophet Joseph Smith it was rumored that the Saints would and should go into polygamy so that the ancient patriarchal order of marriage would come to this people. She thought, could I endure to have my dear husband take another woman beside me and make her his wife. Oh, no, no. I certainly could not endure that—no never. Behold ye, I could see that that thing did worry her very much. I certainly said nothing to irritate her. I could see that thing did worry her very much. But I was like they said old David Crockett was, he said first know that you are right and then go ahead and the Lord knew very well that was my constitution regardless of the consequences. So the Lord loved her enough to open to her a vision. She saw herself and she said she knew it was not in this world. She was travelling and came to a very beautiful mansion. She was invited to walk in. She felt inclined and she

did so. She was delighted to see so very beautiful a mansion with every room furnished with such beautiful furniture and it was so very pleasant and neatly and beautifully arranged. And to her great surprise, she saw a large group of women there and they were all the wives of one man and they were as happy and friendly and quietly together as a band of loving sisters could be. No unbecoming word. Neither an unpleasant look. She saw nor heard not any discord. This she saw was polygamy and it was so lovely, it captivated her. She was thoroughly convinced it was of God.

Soon after this was shown to her she said to me, Joseph, when you get another wife, I wish you would get my sister. I said, why her in preference to some other one. She said, because I think that I could get along better with a sister than with a stranger.

And behold ye, I was very greatly surprised for I did perceive that she was in earnest, but, what in the world had happened I could not think. She did not relate to me her vision for a very long time after she had received it for fear that I would be more anxious to get more wives. But she never thought against or fought the principle any more. Yet she fear that I might get another wife and I should think more of her (the second wife), than of her (Maria). So, she besought the Lord on that matter and she said the Lord told her that no woman should ever get between her and her husband.



That promise settled another important question in her mind and verily a great many things the Lord did tell unto her and surely it was to her as wisdom.

I could tell many things that would extol her virtues very highly. She surely was a very thorough going, neat, tidy, prudent, frugal and industrious housewife. She was a very honest, virtuous, devoted wife and a very kind mother to her children and a true and faithful friend to her God and to the Latter-day Saints. She was good to everybody. She has given birth to seven, I think very exceptional and good children and some presume to say that they do not make any better children. Well, I think that I can say, she was a God blessed woman and that she is way up high in my estimation and shall ever be so. If there can be any better women, I certainly will be very glad for them. I feel so very thankful that she is resting. She is not dead, but liveth. She is laboring faithfully with her sisters and with the good Saints up in the world of spirits. She shall receive a glorious resurrection and shall live forever. She shall wear a very bright crown and shall become very glorious and in very rich splendor, for I have certainly seen her in her glorified state.

Now verily, with regard to myself, I propose to say a few words. I do feel my weakness very much but through Christ strengthening me I shall live to see Zion redeemed and the Saints possessing liberty and freedom. The House of God set

in order, the United Order in full, blessed will be the Saints having received the perfect law and keeping it in the center stake of Zion. All which, my God grant me, for Christ's sake amen.

I have received great and precious promises from God my Heavenly Father and I do greatly desire to live here, labor with and suffer with the Saints of God and to sanctify and prepare myself to labor with the holy and the sanctified ones. I desire to accomplish all these things and a great deal more. Surely, the Lord is working marvelously in the earth.

March, 1869. The Union Pacific Railroad was built through the mountains and their cars were running into Salt Lake Valley. A mighty work has been done by our Gentile brethren. I can remember of prophesying that the Gentiles would have to build a railroad through the Rocky Mountains for the benefit of His people. God has surely endowed them with skills and with an abundance of means to build these beautiful but expensive roads for the ancient prophets have plainly predicted that a highway shall be cast up for the ransomed of the Lord to pass over. Now verily, does not this mean that when the fullness of the Gentiles is come in and their time of holding rule, even when their day shall be over and the day of God's redeemed shall come, the gospel then shall go to them in great power and the spirit of God shall rest upon them, the spirit of gathering. Also the ten tribes shall come from the

north country and shall come to the land of Ephraim, even here in Zion and then shall fall down and receive baptism and their washings and anointings, endowments and sealings in the House of the Son of God, even unto the hands of the elders of Israel.

And they shall visit the house of Joseph in defending themselves against their enemies and they shall have to pass on, they shall go east even to the land of Palestine, even to the land that God gave to Abraham. Israel has to be gathered in this the dispensation of the fullness of times from out of the nations and from the islands of the seas unto Zion and to Jerusalem, as the prophets have plainly predicted and foretold.

We shall need many of these highways to be cast up and railroads built upon them for the nations of the ransomed of the world to pass over and then they shall be dedicated unto God for His holy purposes, even for transporting the redeemed of the Lord the millions of His precious people and they shall pass safely over and not any of them, shall perish, not one. Not from railroad collisions, neither shall they perish upon the seas in the mighty steam vessels for they also have been prepared for the purposes of gathering the House of Israel.

March, 1869. There was a large amount of sickness and deaths in Farmington. Our brethren James Smith and John Leevett both buried their only wives which left each a family

of small motherless children and weeping husbands to mourn their loss. Our daughter Lydia Ann was taken also and several others, which deaths caused mourning and lamentation in several families.

*1874*

1874. I have hired Nelson Levy to build for me two houses. One in Hooper for Mary and family and one in Farmington for Laurinda and family. We have been well underway.

[Editor's note: On the remainder of pages 167 and 168, J.L.R. writes about the hard work in which he was involved in providing for his families and in attending to his church responsibilities.]

*October 4th, 1875*

October 4th, 1875. My beloved wife Mary at 11 o'clock a.m. provided to me her fourth child, a splendid daughter which we receive with great joy and thanksgiving unto Almighty God our Heavenly Father. The mother is doing so well that she said that she could attend conference and I found a very long concourse of Saints and the richest, sweetest conference that I ever attended.

December 1st, we named our little daughter Lucy and we blessed her to become a sweet singer in Israel and also to become a precious and pure daughter of Zion.

*February 18th, 1876*

On February the 18th, 1876, my birthday. The Hooper band came and did surprise me. They produced beautiful music and Aunt Mary had made plenty of good (root) beer and she prepared us a splendid supper. We had a very interesting and enjoyable time and a merry dance.

April 6th, 1876. We received a letter from our family this month bringing the sad news of the death of their dear mother, my beloved wife Susan. She departed this life the 19th of April, 1876 without a struggle. She has gone to associate and labor with the great family of Saints behind the veil. She was a very good Latter-day Saint and an affectionate wife and a very kind mother. We mourn her loss and the loss of her company. We feel that our loss is her gain that she has fought a good fight and that she has won a great prize. She did receive the gospel into a good and honest heart. In the love of it she was driven from Missouri with all the Saints in the winter of '38 and '39 with her husband and two little sons and with a servant man who did belong to the Church. He, Mr. Burton, stopped still in the state of Missouri with some of their friends. He said if

the Lord would forgive him for following the Mormons so far, that he would never be guilty of following them any more. And he was as good as his word. He soon sickened and died without showing any symptoms of repentance. She, Susan, as soon as she could came to Nauvoo with the remainder of her family. She lived with and tried to serve God with the Latter-day Saints in the city of Nauvoo. She was born December 4th, 1808. She received her endowments in the temple at Nauvoo in January 1846 and she was sealed to me the same date. She was driven from there with the Saints in the spring of '36 and she did endure persecutions and difficulties with fortitude and a large amount of patience.

She was a very affectionate and a very devoted wife. She bore to me three children, a son and one daughter living and in all things a very good and very substantial Latter-day Saint. I have reason to be very proud. They did receive good Latter-day Saints for companions, have families of good bright interesting children.

Aunt Susan, my very much beloved wife, came with me into these valley and has always been very patient and faithful. She, with us, did pass through two very severe famines with us in the Salt Lake Valley and in 1860 the fall of 1850 in December she went with me to fill a very important mission in Iron County and helped to build up Parowan in Iron County. She has lived and died a Latter-day Saint. She is my second

wife. She is mine for the Lord did say that she is thine. She does belong to thee and I do feel so very thankful to him for so good and worthy a wife. I do receive as a very great blessing from the mighty God my heavenly father. She shall wear a crown of immortal glory and shall receive a glorious resurrection and receive a kingdom and shall inherit celestial glory with her beloved companion. These blessings I seal upon her head in the name of Jesus Christ: and by virtue of the holy patriarchal priesthood, even so, Amen.

April, 1876. My wife Laurinda is now doing what she has been telling us that she could do. She is manufacturing silk from the silk worms eggs. She has totally done the work: Hatched the eggs, fed the worms, prepared the cocoons, reeled and prepared the abundance of sewing silk. Brother Joseph Hadfield of Farmington has woven it into a considerable number of silk handkerchiefs and dress goods. But Laurinda prepared it from the loom. This is the first silk ever made in the mountains, a triumph for which she shall be blessed.

I have obtained from President Brigham Young 150 mulberry trees and sat them in my lot in Farmington this month, April, 1876, for silk purposes.

June 18, 1876. We are receiving letters from our son Nathan from Arizona. They have founded a very good community in the country there and they are working in the United Order and are very well. But we were very sorry to hear of the death

of our much respected brother, Bishop Lorenzo Roundy, who was drowned in trying to cross the big Colorado River.

In August, at Farmington, I attended meetings, prayed for the people and had a very interesting time. Took dinner with my son Oliver and laid my hands upon his first wife's head and blessed her, as she is in confinement. I should note that on June 21st, we went to the endowment house, my wife Laurinda, my eldest son Oliver and my daughter Anna Maria and were baptized for several of our fathers and our mothers and friends and had several of our grandmothers sealed to their husbands. And for my father, his first wife Sarah Clark, sealed to him. We do esteem it a great privilege to do a great work for our forefathers.

September 2nd, we attended a very interesting two day meeting at Farmington touching largely upon the United Order and other general matters of interest. John Taylor, Orson Pratt, Wilford Woodruff and Joseph F. Smith were there. We found our son Nathan there from Arizona and he is very fleshy. He looks and feels well. He has been very much blessed. Missionaries have been called to go into the United States, to Europe and into the south. We have continued to do the work for our dead with endowments and sealings which will now cease here and will be adjourned to the St. George temple in Dixie. The conference was adjourned, to be held in the St. George temple, the 6th day of next April, 1877. The Saints are required



to finish the Salt Lake temple and to build one in Manti or in Sanpete Valley and also one in Cache Valley. My oldest son Oliver is called on a mission to the United States.

December 5th, Tuesday, Nathan starts with his family to Arizona with a good outfit and between this time and Christmas I made several trips into the mountains and brought wood and lumber and also to Coalville, two trips, and brought coal.

·1877-1892·

## Last Years

· Farming · Traveling · Writing

Giving Blessings of Health & Patriarchal Blessings

*January 1st, 1877*

January 1st, 1877. We had a letter from Nathan. They had got to Parowan, Iron County, and had good roads and were getting along well.

[Editor's note: On page 171 J.L.R. tells about his meetings and preachings to the people in Farmington and in Hooper. He also outlines the great amount of work they did during the winter, indicating that

they had received letters from missionaries including Oliver and others.]

April 20th, 1877. Friday, April 20th, Lucy, the first wife of Oliver Lee Robinson died after an illness of about two weeks. My dear son, her beloved husband, was upon his mission in the east. We have written to him of her illness and we did try to save her, but stubborn death would not be diverted. Our faith was not persistent to save her. Her time had come to go so that we had to bid her farewell for the season. We pray for her poor afflicted husband that he may be spared to take the fatherly care of her motherless children and that God would grant unto him grace that sad bereavement may not overcome him and that he may be able to kiss the rod and to acknowledge the hand of God in this as well as in all things. For surely, the Lord giveth and the Lord taketh away. They were very good children, believers in the holy gospel, son and daughter of Zion and the Lord had given unto them a large family of children, very bright, interesting, good children, God blessed children, heavenly treasures, how thankful they ought to be unto their God for them.

Lucy was buried on the 22nd of April. The neighbors and her friends were very attentive and kind and did sympathize deeply with their dear weeping almost heartbroken children and they turned out largely at the funeral. The brethren Job Wellings and Edward Stratford did talk so very feelingly,

beautifully upon that occasion and the services were very impressive.

May 10th, three of our boys, namely Amos, Jedediah and George start for the Promitory to get cedar logs or to cut and bank them with teams, tools and provisions. We asked the blessings of our God upon them that they may be preserved and prospered and that they may be successful and that the Lord may abundantly bless them.

May 12th and 13th, 1877. We attended a good conference meeting in Salt Lake City. The priesthood is getting waked up and is in earnest about organizing this church, this kingdom of God into stakes of Zion. The Holy Ghost is moving upon the presidency of the Church to organize this people into stakes that we might have more perfect discipline and order and that the Saints may have their lamps trimmed and burning and that our people may get to building temples more thoroughly for we have to build them as well as to preach the gospel. My son Oliver arrived home from his mission in New York. He grieved sadly over the death of his wife, Lucy.

May 19th, 20th and 21st. A conference was held in Logan, Cache Valley, to organize now into stakes of Zion. The program is in full blast. The President has selected the spots and they have dedicated the same unto God for a temple in Logan and the ground is broken and the people are committed to build it.

May 22nd, the eldest daughter of Joseph E. and Dory Robinson died. They took her death very hard. She was a very lovely child and while I was sitting by the side of the corpse at the time of the funeral, a very sweet and a very happy feeling burned in my bosom. I shall never forget it was extraordinary.

May 26th, 27th, 28th. There was a conference held in Ogden City in which there was a more perfect and complete organization effected. The presidency and apostles that were present in their teachings and preaching and instructions to the Saints were extremely rich and instructive. They talked upon many important subjects, and silk culture was one. My wives Mary and Laurinda who live in Farmington, were there at this meeting and as Aunt Laurinda had upon herself rich beautiful silk dress that she had made with her own hand, except the weaving, but even from the elements and they called upon her to rise up in the congregation that the people might see the rich and the beautiful silk dress that she had made with her hands.

June, Mary is making cheese and Laurinda is making silk. We help her gather mulberry leaves to feed to the worms that they may return to us the beautiful silk we are needing. We are writing a letter to our son Nathan in Arizona.

June 16th and 17th. We attended a very interesting conference in Farmington. President Young and some of the twelve

were there and at this conference the Davis Stake of Zion was organized, by ordaining Bishop William Smith of Bountiful President and Christopher Layton Bishop of the Kaysville First Ward and Anton Call Bishop of Bountiful for second counselor. Twelve high priests were organized into the twelve high counselors. Thomas Grover the first and myself as one of them. There were some other bishops ordained and Brother John Tibbits was ordained patriarch. Thomas S. Smith of Farmington was ordained and set apart as president of the high priest quorum in Davis Stake of Zion. Thomas Steed is first and Joab Welling his second counselor.

At this conference also there were several of the brethren down from Ogden. President Perry and one of his counselors and Professor Monch and also others. They came to my house in Farmington to see our silk and worms. Some of them had never seen any before. Meetings were held in different wards and a very good spirit attended all their meetings. Also, a meeting was held in Hooper and our president Gilbert Belnap was ordained bishop. Charles Parker his first and William (Felinders) his second counselor.

June 24th. Sunday we attend meetings in Hooper. The bishop called upon us to address the people and the Lord was with us. Our boys are home from the Promitory. We shall prevail.

[EDITOR'S NOTE: At this point there are seven blank pages in J.L.R.'s journal.]

February 1887. I put up with Brother Edward Richens and family. He lives one mile north of Echo Summit County, a family of good Latter-day Saints and a well to do of this world's goods. I feel very much at home with them. I have been acquainted with them for many years. I found Sister Sary [probably Sarah] his wife very feeble, and while with them about six days I anointed and blessed his wife and gave to their eldest daughter, Sary Ellen, a good patriarchal blessing, a daughter of about 19 years.

It is very stormy these days (February 12th and 13th). There is much snow sleighing in this country. We attend meetings at Coalville, the Summit Stake quarterly conference. A very good meeting, they were trying to get up a reformation. They seem to feel the need of it very much. They are a very good people and are building a very fine, large beautiful stake house which would be a credit to any people on this earth. I took dinner with Brother and Sister George Beard, a nice family and on the 14th, Monday, drove to Enterprise, took some coal, put up with Brothers Joseph and Silas Card. They both had buried each of them a wife, they have their very aged mother with them and their sister Harriett who had left Elkany Smith to keep their house. She is a very good saint, good woman. While here, I was sick some and she administered to me a

good dose of ginger tea. I received from the Lord a good word for her and told her to keep the Word of Wisdom strictly and the commandments of God and her sins should all be forgiven her. Also that she should take good care of her aged mother while she should stop with them. This would not be long and also that she should take good care of her brothers while they should need or want her to that she should have strength and that God would provide her a good man that should lead her into the celestial kingdom of God and that man should preside over her there and that she should inherit celestial glory with her companion.

On the 15th I visited a few minutes with Brother and Sister Havens. They both had been very much afflicted with the rheumatics this winter but are better now.

I drove down the canyon, a warm day, and put up with my daughter Janie and family.

My son-in-law, Byran Bibie, lives in Uintah in Weber, a very good man with a very good, comfortable home and a large orchard. He is a good provider. He has a very excellent, good wife and family. She is my third wife Laurinda's eldest daughter. They received me very kindly. I stopped with them two nights. It is very stormy with much snow. My wife, her mother, was there on a visit, a very smart old lady of 66. Now I certainly do feel myself highly favored of the Lord for He has given me five wives. They were all living at the same time, good

affectionate wives and they all bore to me children, good and well disposed children. My first wife Maria, bore me seven sons and two daughters. My second wife, Susan, bore me three children, one son and two daughters. Third wife, Laurinda, bore me eight children, two sons and six daughters. Fourth wife, Lydia, gave me six children, four sons and two daughters. Fifth wife, Mary, bore me four sons and two daughters and notwithstanding we are in jeopardy every hour, yet we feel exceedingly happy and do rejoice with exceeding great joy, for God is with me. I shall not want.

On the 17th I drove down to Hooper and home—heavy wheeling, the children are well, no snow here.

I think I shall copy a letter written by myself to my afflicted children soon after the death of my dear son, Oliver Lee Robinson. He died August 18th, 1886. I was some 200 miles north at the time of his death, was at Eagle Rock on a Sunday the day of his funeral and preached to the Saints in that place. I saw an account in the Deseret News of his death on Monday the day after.

[This is a copy of the letter.]

*Willow Creek, Idaho, September 12th, 1886.*

*To my dearly beloved and afflicted children: Joseph Eliza and family, Anna Maria Wilcox and family, Alma Robinson and family, Ester and all of Lucy's children and their families, greetings:*



*I received the very sad and unlooked for news of the death of my dear son Oliver and your very dear brother, husband and father. We felt very gloomy and sorrowful. We truly mourned the loss of so good a man. We said oh Lord, why is it so, why should he be stricken down in the prime of life? Is it thy will oh Lord that he should be taken from us? But I felt to say, like one of old, the Lord giveth and the Lord taketh away and blessed be the name of the Lord. I felt it is the hand of the Lord, let Him do what seemeth Him good. I said God bless my dear children, strengthen them that they may be comforted, that they may not any of them go distracted, but that they might have grace sufficient to their day. I know it is extremely hard to bear and I will try to say something to comfort you. His present life was not his first, he lived long before the foundations of this earth was 'laid. He was one of the noble sons of God that set in the grand council, or when the grand council set to take into consideration the propriety of organizing this earth. He did help to get up the program for all of the great and mighty series that should transpire upon the same, the mighty revelations that should take place and all the important dispensations that should usher in and the times when they should be introduced. He also voted for every man that should head those dispensations. He was well acquainted with those men. He was an intelligent spirit and shall become a ruler in God's kingdom.*

*Now, behind the veil there is a great and mighty work to be done, a thousand times more people to preach the gospel to than there is at the present time on this earth. He was wanted there. They will use him well, he will have plenty of work, he is very willing and ingenious and will give good satisfaction and in taking him he will be taken from the evils to come. He died in the faith, he is happy, our loss is his exceeding great gain. Now my dear children I want you to be reconciled to the will of heaven.*

*Thank God that He gave you so good and interesting a father and husband and brother, as I thank Him that He gave me so good and dutiful a son and that He left him with us so long. How thankful we ought to be to the Lord. Now, our lives are in the hands of God. We know not how soon our turn will come. Therefore, I would say, dear children, each and every one of you, seek the Lord, seek Him diligently for surely everyone that seeks the Lord Jesus diligently shall find Him precious to your souls. Now we shall go to him, he will not come to us until the resurrection and that shall not be very, very long before he shall receive his body again and it shall be a perfect, healthy and immortal body. Now, if we desire it and we are faithful, and are willing to suffer with the Saints and will assist to build up the kingdom of God on this earth, some of us will live until the Savior comes. Still, we shall have to die, but we shall be changed in the twinkling of an eye from*

*mortal to immortal and our work will continue. We shall no time to rest, so must it be.*

*I received a note last evening from Joseph informing us of the death of Oliver, but the first we heard was in the Deseret News. The day of his funeral we were at Eagle Rock and I preached to the Saints in that place. I expect to come down soon and hope I shall see you and talk with some of you.*

*God bless you all, my mother used to say it in prayer. Prayer makes the (darkness) almost bright. So don't forget your prayers, by no means don't and the Lord will comfort you.*

*Mary grieved very much over the death of Oliver, she sends her love to you all. We are all well at present. She says she prays for you all the time. Now, we mourn not as those that have no hope. Now Oliver has a great many friends and relatives and acquaintances over there. He lived and died in the faith of the gospel. It is certainly well with him. I had rather a thousand times rather bury a child or a friend of mine pure and innocent in the faith of the gospel than that they should apostatize or disgrace themselves to bring a strain upon their characters. I will tell you more when I come, so no more at present. These few lines from your father and best earthly friend to all my children and grandchildren, signed Joseph L Robinson.*

March 1st, 1887. There has been a monstrous bill before the House of Congress of these United States. It has passed

through both Houses of Congress and is now awaiting the signature of the President that it may become law. It is a very ugly, ungodly, unconstitutional thing, a thing far beneath the character of white men, a thing calculated to destroy the people of the Saints, supposing it will drive them mad so that they may resist a United States officer and that they may have a pretext to bring an army to bear against Mormons, the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. They suppose it will be an easy matter for 50 millions of people to wipe out a few hundred thousand poor despised Mormons.

This is called the Edmans-Tucker Bill. But surely God is with this people, the Latter-day Saints and He has sworn to defend His people. He has promised a wo unto them that fight against Zion. Now this people are improving, they are doing better, they are certainly making up to a greater sense of their duties. They say their prayers better, they pay their tithing better, they better keep the Word of Wisdom, they send their fast offerings better and their Sabbath meetings and their offerings and they look after the wants of the poor better also. Now verily, this land in the midst of these mountains is and has been greatly blessed unto and for the Saints and surely also it is God's thrashing floor and the wicked are His rod and He will surely thrash His people and clean them until they become very clean. He certainly will try them as Abraham was tried and as gold seven times tried, in the fire.

Yea, He shall test them, that He shall know verily whether we will be willing to die for God and for our friends as Jesus was willing to die for His enemies or whether we will rather save our own dear lives.

Now, we may see the necessity of our living near to God that we may always have His spirit with us, for surely everyone that is faithful so that He does get the spirit of the Lord and keep it for a bosom companion, shall never fall away, no never.

Now the Father is very anxious to save His people and He knows surely and so do I know that the only possible chance for us to become Saviors upon Mount Zion, to become kings, to wear a bright crown, to come into possession of eternal riches, yea, to receive eternal lives, or to possess eternal lives is to become pure as God is pure. Now the wicked are acting under the influence of the evil one. They are acting themselves. They must be held responsible for what they do. They have gone so far and have so much of wickedness and abominations, they have brutally beaten and in cold blood murdered and robbed and drove the Latter-day Saints, yea four times they have smitten and driven them and the Saints have borne it very patiently and we have importuned at the feet of their judges, have importuned at the feet of their governors, and have importuned at the feet of the President, yea three times and they have not one of them heeded our

prayers, neither done anything to redress our wrongs, neither have they ever executed one man for murdering a Mormon. Now surely, will not the Lord come out of His hiding place and vex this nation with a sore vexation? Will He not in His wrath cut off those wicked and unjust stewards, those wicked and ungodly presidents and those proud, wicked and high minded senators, representative and high supreme court and all the house of Congress, the ungodly, unmerciful governors, and all the unjust, ungodly judges, marshalls and juries? Yea and verily, shall those escape who have encouraged them in their murdering of the prophets and elders and Saints and in all their unholy proceedings? In imprisoning good men? In breaking up families?

Yea cursed is he or all they that parteth the man and wife and cause little children to suffer. Verily shall any one of those escape the vengeance of an offended God? For in behalf of a sorely oppressed and afflict people, shall not the people of this nation not only suffer in the agonies of death in a very sore and severe suffering? Verily shall they not also pay the debt they owe to the people of the Latter-day Saints for the loss of time and property as they have by them been driven from their temple and homes and possessions in Kirtland, Ohio and from their homes and possessions in Jackson County, Missouri and from all their homes and possessions and property in and from the state of Missouri? They have also been

driven from their lovely temple which was built expressly by the command of the Almighty God by the hands and means of the poor afflicted Latter-day Saints from the rich and beautiful city of Nauvoo which was built on as lovely and beautiful a site as the mighty Mississippi, the father of waters, as ever the great creator of heaven and earth ever formed. Yea a lovely city. They have also been driven from their homes in Lima and from all the countries round about in the state of Illinois and from our large and extensive and valuable possessions and improvements in Iowa and the surrounding country. Yea, driven by mob violence from fifty to one hundred thousand people entirely away from civilization into the deserts, into the Rocky Mountains among the wild men of the forest to perish, as they hoped and expected we should. Verily, when they saw that we were up and going and then, to be sure that we should perish as they were watching our movements, Stephen A. Douglas, a man who was aspiring to be president of these United States, did propose to President Polk that they should make a demand of our people for 500 good, efficient able bodied men to be sent immediately on route to California to assist the United States in fighting the Mexicans as the United States and Mexico were at war at that time.

Now in the event they refused to give these 500 men to go, what shall we do, after consultation President Polk did agree to empower Stephen A. Douglas with authority from

the United States to go into the western part of Missouri and beat up for or raise an army of volunteers sufficient to use up and wipe out the Saints, yea the entire Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints.

Then again, their conclusion, in case we did send the 500 men, that the Indians and the desert would certainly use up the remainder of this much despised and poor and afflicted people.

Now, we wish to ask a civil and solemn question. What shall be done with that nation, or people, that have dealt so very wickedly with the religious sect whose only fault was in believing in and striving in their weakness to keep the commandments of God, their Heavenly Father, and to believe in and pattern after the Lord Jesus Christ and love their neighbors as themselves. They have always sought diligently and manifested a disposition to keep inviolate the Constitutional laws of the land. Now, before we pass sentence on this mighty and proud nation which has grown to such dimensions upon this choice land of Joseph, a portion of the land of Zion, we would like to examine this sect of despised Mormons and see if we can ascertain their true character and what their work has been and something of what they have done ecclesiastically and mentally and physically. In the first place, they have become organized with a complete set of officers, fully and grandly equipped with a more complete set of officers than



any other sect or society on this earth or that ever has been according to history. Furthermore, this people claim to be inspired of God that they have received authority from Jesus Christ and that this organization was given by inspiration and it is an exact pattern of the organization in the heavens. Our elders do preach by the power of the Holy Ghost, they do baptize their converts by immersion in water for the remission of their sins, they do in their confirmation lay on hands for and do give the Holy Ghost to these they baptize as the apostles in ancient times. Now this Holy Ghost does come and rest down upon the faithful Latter-day Saints which does open up to their minds things of God and of godliness and their minds do expand far and wide and giveth unto them utterance which in many instances far exceeds the wisdom, the understanding, the language and minds and intellect of this wise and learned generation.

Now verily, God our Heavenly Father, in this our day has surely revealed himself to man on this earth and hath revealed and sent the holy gospel in its fullness with authority to preach and administer the same in that He has conferred the holy priesthood, called the Melchizedek priesthood, with some branches or an appendage called the Aaronic priesthood and also evangelical or patriarchal high priesthood. In a presiding priesthood, the Aaronic is the lesser, its officers consist of priest, teacher, deacon, bishop, the bishopric is in,

or holds the presidency over that priesthood and to attend to all temporal affairs of the gospel. An important office in the Melchizedek priesthood is that of Patriarch who comes through a particular lineage of chosen seers holding the right to bless. A patriarch should be a seer and a revelator, yea, a mighty minister, yea, the order of celestial and eternal marriage comes under that head or branch of the priesthood. One high priest is selected by inspiration and nominated, seconded and voted in by the members of the Church. He thus becomes the President of the Church of Jesus Christ in all the world. He chooses for first and second counselors two high priests. They too have to be voted in and accepted by the Church or the baptized members or disciples of Christ and ordained also and set apart to that office. Then, we have the First Presidency of the Church. They can proceed inasmuch as they have timber sufficient to build, they can proceed and ordain and organize the Church complete with every office and officer necessary and with every quorum requisite.

Now, there must be a quorum of twelve apostles, or travelling high council. There must be a local quorum of twelve high councilors with their president. There must a quorum of seventies with their presidents. There should be a quorum of high priests, a quorum of elders, a quorum of priests, a quorum of teachers, a quorum of deacons with their presidents with their patriarch, also, now all these quorums should meet

each by themselves to be instructed in the duties of their office and callings.

Now this Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints was organized the sixth day of April, 1830, with six members and now they will number some hundreds of thousands.

But, now, what have they done? Have they accomplished anything much? I will answer, yes indeed, a great deal. As we have stated, they had been driven four times from four different places, many have been slain, mobbed, robbed and driven. Yet, they have built a great many cities and a great many large and splendid tabernacles and a great many meeting houses and a great many school houses and several academies, one temple in Kirtland, Ohio and the church owns it yet. They have built one temple in Nauvoo, Illinois and one has been destroyed which was commenced in Missouri but our people were driven away so soon they could not finish it. They have sent thousands and thousands of elders to the nations of the earth and have preached the gospel in and unto a great portion of this earth or nations.

In these mountains they have built four temples, two of them finished and two of them not yet finished. They have expended millions of dollars in gathering the poor from the nations of the earth. They have made one move south, at the suggestion of our president and great leader Brigham Young. All of this great people north of Utah Valley spent one

season with a fixed purpose of setting the torch to everything combustible if that horrible destructive army should come in. If our leaders should say fire, we should certainly have fired all our cities and everything that would burn. This the Lord had done to prove us for verily He would know if we loved Him or if we would do as we were told to sacrifice all and trust in God. When He saw what we would do He says you may go home and we felt like humble, faithful children. We returned to our homes with joy and rejoicing. We felt to praise the Lord our God and thank Him with all our hearts and verily the Holy Ghost said unto me you may now (meaning the people of the Saints) build permanently which said to me, you Latter-day Saints will remain. Then again the Lord tried His people on this wise to see if they would certainly obey Him in other things also. We had been once tried and had paid one-tenth of all we had for tithing. He says to us again through His servant Brigham Young, he says brethren it is the will of the Lord that we should be tithed again one-tenth of all you possess. Now what say you? Yes, we say, yes we do these things without grumbling. Then again he said, boys you must go to and fort yourselves in by building a wall about your cities. Behold, we went to work like good boys and expended a large amount of labor and means which gave a great amount of labor to poor men and behold ye we went to work with a will until the Lord said it is enough. He said, I will accept these testimonies and

you may stop this work for I will be a wall of defense. I will protect this people and so it was our Father accepted these three testimonies and verily He has placed a hedge around this people that they shall not be moved. For this blessing we truly feel very grateful unto Him our God and now is this sufficient to establish the character and worth of this people? We could say a great deal more in favor of this people, but we think this will do.

And now we say, inasmuch as this nation has sought diligently to destroy this people, let them be destroyed and whereas the Gentiles have sought to take away our liberties and to prevent us from governing ourselves even so wilt thou rend from them the government and give it to a people better than they who will frame none but constitutional laws and administer them in righteousness that all people may possess their rights and have liberty to worship God as they choose. If it should cost the lives of all the wicked, amen and amen.

We look for the judgement of God to be poured out without measure upon this very wicked and adulterous, murderous, ungodly nation and that in the near future our Father and God shall come out of His hiding place and vex this nation with a sore vexation. And He shall cut off those unwise stewards and unjust stewards and He rather shall send them to their own place—and it shall come to pass that wars shall be poured out abundantly upon this nation. Yea and upon all nations also

and it shall come to pass also that great hailstones shall be poured out so, which shall destroy the crops of the earth. Also, our God shall send great and mighty storms and whirlwinds which shall fall with pain upon the heads of the wicked and they shall perish.

Yet, in all this we rejoice not in the sufferings of the wicked (but rather they would repent and live) but we do and will rejoice in the Lord our God, in that He is mindful of His people Israel, that He will yet choose Jacob for His inheritance and Jerusalem for His resting place and that He doth have mercy upon poor grieving Zion. Yea our God shall comfort her, He shall surely redeem her, for surely she shall be very beautiful in her situation, the joy of the whole earth, in the lives of the north, the city of the great king, for surely Zion shall become very pure. Out of her shall proceed them all, for it shall come to pass as saith the prophets of God that our venerable father Adam shall come (in the near future it shall be) to the center stake of Zion and shall sit in council with a host of the ancient and modern prophets, with many of the venerable fathers and a host of the mighty sons of God and a large concourse of angels. They will certainly take into consideration the situation, they shall certainly understand the true character of the Latter-day Saints and shall understand how many times they have been smitten by the Gentiles, their ungodly enemies. How many have been murdered by them and robbed and

plundered and driven and how patiently they have borne all their persecutions. How many times they have importuned at the feet of their judges, their governors, their presidents, also and that they have not ever heeded their prayers neither have they ever executed a man for murdering a Latter-day Saint and that their law makers have made many unjust unconstitutional, ungodly laws and on purpose for our destruction have sent very beastly, wicked men here among us to execute these ungodly laws, which they have done with a vengeance. They have very unmercifully abused and beaten and imprisoned and murdered innocent men, women, and children and there were but few that had the virtue or the moral courage to plead the cause of or protest against the abuses of the Saints. And they, this grand council, shall decide that the government, the kingdom and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heavens shall be rent from the Gentiles and they shall decide that the people of the Saints have proved themselves worthy. That they have earned the kingdom, and they, this grand and mighty council, shall take and give and confer the kingdom and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heavens unto the people of the Saints of the Most High and they, these poor despised Mormons, Latter-day Saints, shall take the kingdom and possess it under the whole heavens. Then they, the Saints, shall organize an exact, just, holy constitutional laws and appoint just and righteous judges. Then and not until

then, shall the law go forth of Zion and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem and then there shall be an end of kingdoms. There shall be but one kingdom and that shall be of God. And behold ye, it shall last forever, which may God grant for Christ's sake, amen.

February 28th. I wrote two letters and sent one to Mary F. Robinson and one to Amos G. Robinson and sent some recommends to unite with the branch of the church there.

March 3rd. Attended fast meeting, the fullest house and the best fast meeting I have ever witnessed in Hooper. Very many bore their testimonies. It was plainly manifest the spirit of God is striving with the people and to the true Latter-day Saints it is very cheering. Several children were blessed. We administered to Bishop Belnap for his health.

March 5th. Getting out and sorting potatoes, laboring hard this week at home. Fine weather came in with March. Our boys are plowing.

March 6th. We attend meeting, a full house to overflowing. Partook of the sacrament of the Lord's supper. There was manifest a very solemn and humble spirit. Elders Henry Manning and William Garner were called to the stand. They spoke very good to strengthen and instruct the Saints. Administered to counselor John (Jolinders). Went to Brother Manning's, administered to a very sick sister. Had a good, rich conversation



with the brethren, sisters, several sisters wished me to give them a patriarchal blessing, I have to promise them.

March 7th. I took my wife and Laurinda Parker to Farmington. Arrive eight o'clock one evening. Found the children mostly well. Found Joseph Elijah with a very bad foot. I anointed and blessed him. We promised him in the name of the Lord he should recover and become sound, saying to him, be of good courage, be very humble, exercise faith in God, and He shall surely visit thee, He shall heal thy feet, and set them on high. Thy body also shall be healed and thou shalt be exalted in His presence.

March 8th, 1887. We visited my daughter, Anna Maria, at her house. I gave to her a patriarchal and father's blessing. She feels herself very greatly blessed. She is an exceedingly kind, affectionate and a faithful daughter of Zion. She received a very choice blessing. Eugene Robinson, my grandson, is getting better, visited with him and Lorin and Ester and their families which was very interesting because of the spirit and love of God which is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us. Visited also with sisters Mary Clark and Mary Elizabeth, her daughter. Had a very good, interesting talk with them, upon important and family matters.

March 9th. Visited with Anna Robinson and family. Prayed with and took breakfast with them. She is my son Oliver's

[deceased] second wife. A very amiable, good woman with a very good family of seven living children. She has buried four. She shall be blessed. We came home to Hooper with my daughter Sister Parker. Had a good visit, received letters from Willow Creek. My wife Mary and Lee, my son. They are having a long and hard winter there. Was pleased to hear they were well and that they were interested in the work of God as the Saints are alive and trying to do their duties in that part of the vineyard.

March 13th. Sunday attended meetings, a full house. Opened the meeting by prayer, broke bread and Brothers George Towers and Ollie Olson talked good to the Saints. After meeting, by request, went to Brother Ollie Olson's and gave him and his wife and Brother Jones a good sound patriarchal blessing. Brother Olson brought me home. We feel ourselves greatly blessed, I, under the influence of the Holy Ghost in giving, and they in receiving.

March 14th. Monday, my son Samuel, a fine lad of about 17. He has gone as a teamster to work on the railroad. I pray for him that the spirit and blessing of God may be poured out upon him that he may be preserved from gross sins, from death, or even much sickness, as also all our brethren.

Burt and I, putting in wheat and some garden, peas, turnips, cabbage. It has been for two weeks very fine weather. I am

writing some these day evenings. My faith is strengthening, very happy.

March 20th. Sunday morning I gave to my step-son Burt Simmons, and his wife Sarah Jane, a patriarchal and good father's blessing. They felt very humble. Attended meeting, a very full house, missionaries from Pleasant View. Our meeting, very interesting today. One of the speakers told a very thrilling incident of moving that he experienced and passed through in a late mission in one of the southern states. A mob of wicked men, determine to stop the Mormons from preaching in that country gathered around and shot at the elders with intent to kill them, this brother said. One bullet came so close to his head it knocked him down and that several pierced close by his head but through the mercy of God he escaped death at this time. But, he knew Mormonism could be true and that God was with this people.

After the meeting closed I repaired to Brother Henry Manning's house and partook of a good supper and then gave three patriarchal blessings upon the heads of Sister Lee and Sister Manning and one of her daughters, Sister Belnap and surely they felt themselves greatly blessed and manifested a determination to try if possible to render themselves worthy before the Lord to receive them.

The past week, very fine weather, working very hard upon the farm to help Burt put in our crops.

That monstrous bill, called the Edmans and Tucker Bill, has become law, but we hope to live for all that. We look unto God and He shall bear us up victorious. We continued working, finished sowing small grain.

March 26th, Saturday, took some molasses and salt up Weber. Put up with Brother and Sister Hadens. Had a good visit with them. Sold some and bought some potatoes for seed.

March 27th. Sunday morning drove to my daughter's in Richville and visited with them. Found them well and with them attended meeting, the young men's conference held in the morning. Spirited meeting. I was invited to the stand and I felt honored with having the privilege to speak in their house and bear my testimony to the truth of the work of God in these last days. I told them that Mormonism was a creature of God and that God was with this people, that they should never be moved. That this was His thrashing floor and that He should thoroughly purge out from among His people those that offend and make a lie. That this people should continue the good work of building holy temples and that work should never cease until thousands of them should be built and that the sons and daughters of Zion should work in them all through the millennium or until the last son and daughter of Adam that was worthy should be administered for and unto. That our young men, sons of Ephraim, had a mighty work to do and that their sons that were yet in embryo should come

forth and rise and perform a greater work than ever had been performed yet on this earth. And that we seventies, elders, presidents, bishops and everybody had to better themselves and purify ourselves before the Lord or He would remove us out of the way, for this kingdom was destined to go ahead and kingdoms had to be thrown down and that truth must prevail on this earth for as the Lord saith, wickedness shall not reign.

We told them that Jesus Christ was the great prototype, a pattern for us to try and imitate, a pattern for piety, a pattern for meekness, a pattern for obedience, a pattern for prayerfulness, and patience and always doing good. He was the one, altogether lovely, the chiefest among the thousands and altogether the most amiable and lovely person that ever lived on the earth.

We told the young men to fear God and keep His commandments better than their fathers had done, for them to improve every opportunity of doing good and of learning that they might become very efficient and mighty men in their day and in the world, for great things should be required at their hands and we blessed them in the name of the Lord.

After the meeting, we retired home, to my son-in-law's house. He has a very good house and he is a very good man, a good Latter-day Saint, a home missionary, a just man, a preacher of the gospel and a very good school. I employed

him to write for me some as I had given some fine previous blessings to Elder Edward (Richany) and his good wife and they had been taken in such a clumsy way that they could not read them and I deciphered and read them and he wrote them in a good, plain, intelligible hand, and it came to pass it did take us until after ten o'clock in the evening and I had a good interesting visit with my children.

March 28th. In the morning, drove to Brother Richen's. He lives near Echo. Found them in usual health and had a good visit with them. Prayed for and with them and delivered and read their blessings to them and they were very much pleased and delighted for they were saintly, good, sound, rich blessings, but none too good for them (if they live for them).

March 29th. Drove to Enterprise. Stopped with Brother Havens and family. We administered to their little granddaughter as she was very unwell. Sold all I took to sell and bought what I went for that was some early seed potatoes. Was blessed of the Lord greatly.

March 30th. A good day but cool. Drove down to Hooper, home, left five bushels with Brother William Fowler for seed as he greatly needed them and he had let me have some fruit trees which I sent to my boys and family at Willow Creek.

March 31st. The last day of March, spring has come, travel is good, the weather dry, preparing to attend conference at Provo this spring. The Lord be with His people.

April 3rd, 1887. A Sabbath day, a day of rest and we feel truly to keep the Sabbath day holy unto the Lord, but as Brother Parker and I concluded to attend conference and travel we concluded to start today. But as our bishop, and counsel and people of this ward are very busy in trying to build for themselves a meeting house (which they greatly need and ought to have built long since) Brother Parker must stay until after the meeting. Consequently, we set out at about half past four in the evening, arriving at Farmington at dark. Good weather, the roads very dry and dusty. We feel well and truly very zealous in the work and cause of God our Heavenly Father. Knowing as we do by the Holy Ghost, that Mormonism is verily true and that God loves His people and that He is with this people and that He does always pour out His spirit and blessings upon the Saints and elders at His general and semi-annual conferences, therefore we go in the name of the Lord with joyful hearts and with cheerful countenances.

We find the children and family very well and my son Joseph Elijah greatly improved as he had been very sick for several weeks. We had prayed for him very much. We felt very thankful to our God that He had restored him so much so that he could commence his labors once more, for we do know it is the hand of God for he is a very honorable and useful man and a man beloved of the Lord and a man greatly beloved and respected by his brethren and the Saints generally.

April 4th Monday we leave Farmington. I take my wife Laurinda M. and my daughter Laurinda E., Brother Charles Parker's wife and we drove to Salt Lake City and called at Sister Annette Cummings. She gave us a good dinner. Salt Lake City is very large and beautiful, a city of the Saints, but at the present time there is much in it that is not Zion or righteousness, but is Babylon, but we hope the wickedness of the city will not become so great that the entire city will have to be destroyed or burned up.

We drove about 15 miles into what is called West Jordan and stopped with Brother William Bills and family. They were very much pleased to see us as we were old acquaintances. They treated us very cordially. We had a very good time and visit with them. They seemed very anxious we should come and stop with them on our return. They said that the marshalls had very lately given that neighborhood a thorough scouring for polygamist men. They did not find the bishop but they gathered in one of his sons and one of his wife's brother's polygamist wives, but the bishop fell not into their clutches at that time. He said he has never kept the Edmons law one hour but still he does not wish to be cast into the pen, if the Lord will, he rather stay out. He ate supper with us and spent with us a portion of the evening. He believes very much like I preach that the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints shall never again come into bondage, that she shall not be



moved for truly God hath planted a hedge about this people and He shall see to it that the enemy shall not break it down so as to drive, scatter and destroy this people, His elect. So, Brother Bills says he believes with all his heart and mind and strength as I do. So it is, I do find now and then one or two that believe same as I do.

April 5th. Tuesday, the bishop was with us this morning. He blessed us and seemed very anxious that we should certainly stop with them when we returned. He lives west of the Jordan River. We feel very much refreshed and comfortable and thankful. At rather a late hour this morning we resume our journey, crossed over the Jordan and away south with the Utah southern wind around the headway, way up from Jordan. We looked down with admiration upon the crooked Jordan moving the fresh waters from the great reservoir in Utah Valley depositing it in the Great Salt Lake and also the Rio Grande road by the side of her and the canals also on either side of her to water the thirsty land in Salt Lake Valley, a great work done by the hands of the Latter-day Saints. God bless the Saints.

Passing through the city of Lehi, a large town more than twice or three times the size it was the last that I saw it before, also through American Fork, a very large and beautiful city, as also Pleasant Grove. I was greatly astonished to see the great improvements in this valley and also on the Provo Bench,

the many streams of water we crossed, the many farms they watered, arriving into the large and noted city of Provo. Here we found Sister Mary Peck, with her daughter Sister Grayham, a good home and family with plenty. We put up with them, they gave us tickets to enter into their hall and we witnessed their theatrical performance that evening and it brought considerable laughter to the surface and some out of us.

April 6th. A beautiful morning and conference opened at ten o'clock in a very large and beautiful tabernacle which was very well built. Singing was by a good choir. There were five of the twelve on the stand, Apostle John Taylor, the first speaker, he bore a good testimony saying there was never a great miracle wrought or any great blessing obtained without fasting and that that was a very important ordinance and that a real Latter-day Saint fasted much and that the people of the Saints must repent of their sins, fast and pray much that they may come into the possession of a greater amount of the spirit of the Lord and that they may get deeper into his graces and favor.

Abraham H. Cannon was the next speaker. He bore a faithful testimony and with much spirit and energy exhorted the Saints to greater diligence and faithfulness that they might obtain the victory and win a prize.

In the two o'clock afternoon meeting, the first speaker was Apostle H. G. Grant. He gave us a very interesting discourse

edifying and very instructive, encouraging the Saints. President Angus M. Cannon spoke at some length, very spirited and good to the Latter-day Saints saying the brethren "that had not entered into the holy order of plurality might with propriety take that best oath and save their fathers and brethren from falling into the hands of those hellish skunks and cut throats. On account of my deafness, I could not understand all his words but suffice it to say he spoke extremely well.

April 7th. The house was called to order by Apostle Lorenzo Snow followed by singing and prayer. The first speaker, John Henry Smith. The second, delegate Cain and a man, I don't know his name. The next speaker was Elder John Stacy? All of those brethren spoke with boldness and a great deal of earnestness being interesting to the Latter-day Saints, I should judge from what I heard. Also, Apostle Franklin K. Richards made a splendid talk and the authorities were voted in. Apostle Lorenzo Snow spoke, I could not hear, but from appearances he greatly interested the people for he is an able speaker, a good man.

In the two o'clock afternoon meeting Bishop Whitney read a very lengthy and a first class more than sound epistle from the First Presidency and the conference closed. All in all, a very interesting conference and it is raining nicely which will be a great blessing to the people, but will make it very unpleasant for the people who get a good soaking in their best attire.

We drove to Pleasant Grove ten miles on our return. We brought Sister (Heljion) to her home there and we stopped with them over night, thankful for rain.

We might have stated that we drove to Springville while we were in Provo and stayed and visited with some of our friends and stopped with them overnight. Springville has grown wonderfully into a large and beautiful city and we should judge the people are getting wealthy from appearances now with regard to riches it has to my certain knowledge been prophesied that riches should be poured out upon the people of the Saints and that many of them would apostatize. While they did stand poverty and kept the faith and their standing in the Church, but riches will in many instances get them down and out of the Church. Yes, many will apostatize.

April 9th. A fine rain last night. Thank the Lord it will do such a vast amount of good. Have a good road. Drove to Salt Lake City. Stopped with Aunt Jane and George Slade. It rained good this night also. We acknowledge the hand of God, but we find many have gone the wrong way and I fear for them muchly.

April 10th. The Sabbath Day we returned to Farmington and Hooper and home again, thank God. We feel exceedingly happy, the Lord is with us. He has blessed our conference and blessed us on our journey and also with our friends, we always try to remember him. For he, the Lord, is all our joy and in him

we trust and in the service of our God we take great delight, for we try to do his will and also to bear with patience all of our afflictions. We know as Paul said, We joy in tribulation as tribulation worketh patience and patience experience, and experience hope, and hope maketh not ashamed for the love of God is shed abroad in one's heart by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us. Knowing this also that the trial of our faith is more precious than fine gold. For after much tribulation then cometh the blessing for the blood of Christ cleanseth from all sin. But we must be willing to suffer even as he suffered and not murmur even as he never murmured. He always sought the will and the favor of the Father, even so should we, not only to say, but to do his will. To do the will of the Father in all things, now should we expect to earn a great reward, to obtain the kingdom and to enjoy the greatness and glory of the kingdom without sacrifice. Now what is sacrifice? What does sacrifice mean? Now if I have got into the habit of using tobacco, drinking imported tea and coffee and of drinking to excess or imported spiritous liquors or in eating swine's flesh to excess or any other flesh other ways but sparingly, and wisdom prompts leave of any or all of those habits, now we will all admit it will be a sacrifice. Now can we make such a great sacrifice? Well now, I must make it in order to be worthy to obtain hope in Christ and greater sacrifice than these I will

have to make I expect before I will get into the kingdom. Now that will be taking up our cross and following Christ.

Jesus did set us an example worthy of imitation. He did sacrifice a good name, earthly honors and pleasures and wealth and instead of laboring for himself to gain wealth, comfort and the good things of the earth, he labored entirely for the benefit and comfort of the people, both his friends and his enemies too. He not only sacrificed his good name and pleasures in this world but his life also. He did all this to do the will of the Father and in doing this he certainly will obtain a kingdom, honors and glory, even in obtaining a seat at the right hand of the Father on his throne, also he has earned eternal riches, eternal honors, eternal powers, dominion and might, eternal happiness and pleasures.

Time and language will not fail to describe all the benefits and blessings he shall receive just by doing not his own will by the will of the Father and behold ye I do not begrudge him his happiness, amen.

April 10th. Hooper City, we are at home again in Hooper and while at Provo I saw my grandson Joseph West looking well and feeling first rate, very much interested in his studies at school.

I am helping Burt this week hauling manure, planting potatoes, preparing water ditches, sheering sheep and plowing to get our crops in before I go north. I feel cheerful and

happy laboring hard through the day and writing and reading evenings to a late hour.

April 14th. A very pleasant day. I took a trip to west Weber, called and saw Brother [Ferndland]. His hand is getting much better and will get well. Saw Brother Greenwell, a good Ogden butcher, a very good man, he has lately emerged from the pen. He feels first rate, cheerful and happy. He talks good sound Mormonism, good sense. He says he has to live alone by himself or they will plunge him right back into the pen.

I had a good chat with him, sounded him and pronounced him good in the faith of the gospel, well up in my estimation, an honorable man. Two of his sons were in the pen with him and the third barely escaped only by taking the underground. He says they like to have got the whole family.

On my return, settled my water bill and called at Sister John Manning's to see her sick baby. It will recover I think. Its father, Brother John Manning, is on a preaching mission in New Zealand and we pray much for all such. I also called a few moments at my son-in-laws, Charles Parker. He is on work driving for a flowing well. We hope it is successful, as many are flowing and doing nicely in this country now. I saw my daughters, his wife Laurinda and she gave me some honey and also my daughter, [Welle or Wette Rice]. We brought her with us from Farmington for a visit, then called at the house of Brother Bachelor and gave to him and his wife Sister Bachelor,

a good patriarchal blessing. Brother Bevins, our school teacher, wrote them.

April 23rd. I took Brother Case and we visited Brother John Flinders, he is in rather bad condition of mind. The enemy is worrying him and tempting him. We tried to instruct and comfort him. We prayed with him and for them. We anointed and laid our hands upon his head and blessed him in the name of the Lord. He will get better soon we think and I do firmly believe.

Go to Farmington, took to our folks some flour, potatoes, meat and molasses. I found Aunt Rinda and Dora on the sick list, but they soon got better. I found several new born grandchildren to bless.

April 24th. It is the Sabbath, attended meetings, several spoke and spoke very good. I broke bread and administered to my little afflicted grandson Joel Rose as he was afflicted with crapping. I blessed Jedediah and Lora's daughter and gave it the name of Lora. It was born on Sunday morning April 17th, 1887. I also blessed George Clawson's daughter, born January 1887 and gave it the name of Pearl, a fine daughter. Also blessed one of LeGrand Robinson's little daughter and also administered to Eugene Robinson, my grandson for his health. He is poorly yet but is going north by rails. He starts this morning, the 25th. He goes to Elgin, Idaho. I came to Hooper and found all to be well and very busy. I helped Burt



put in the crops and repair the canal. We are working very hard. The weather is cool and I am writing late evenings.

April 30th and May 1st. I wrote two letters and mailed them one to our son Samuel and one to Harriet our daughter.

Sunday, very cool, I drove into the Basin and saw my son William and family, all well. He will let me have his new wagon to take some of our loading north. I drove over to Uintah and visited with my daughter Janie and family, was late for meeting by reason of hinderment. The road being fenced up and I had to turn around so far, but had a good visit with my children. They are trying to be Saints, they are Saints.

May 2nd, Monday. It came to pass, early even before I arose from my bed, the Holy Ghost did manifest many good things unto me such as it had never done before. Which manifestations and revelations caused my heart to rejoice exceedingly. Yea, my joy was very full, almost beyond measure.

Lord, I believe, help thou my unbelief. I did exclaim, praise to the Lord hallelujah, glory to God in the highest I will praise thy name forever and ever.

The promise is, the Holy Ghost shall lead you into all truth, shall take of all things of the Father and show them unto you and show you things to come. Now Jesus saw this but who is there that believes it? I feel very anxious to live up to my privileges and to perform my duty to keep all the commandments. These are my sincere and honest desires.

May 3rd. Visiting with Brother Migley. He is very sick and his case is doubtful.

Burt went to Ogden. He got some goods for me to take to Snake River County.

May 4th–8th. Planting potatoes and working on water section mostly this week. Visiting with Father Migley and blessed him, he may leave us soon. Writing on my history. William came to see me today. He is a good boy.

May 10th–12th. Visited Brother Migley and we blessed him. It took effect, he will recover, thank the Lord and will stop with us yet awhile we hope.

Leave Hooper for Willow Creek and Snake River country. Will take some supplies to my boys and family there. Little David Fowls went with me and drove our team. We made the journey in eight days. We were greatly blessed and favored of the Lord and found our family well and much pleased to see us. Once more, we encountered a sharp hailstorm today, the last day of our drive up here.

May 20th. A splendid rain, said by some to be the best rain they had ever seen in this country. In my stay this time I attended four Sabbath meetings and one fast meeting and preached the gospel to and for a faithful testimony to the Saints of that place. Gave six patriarchal blessings, attended a Relief Society meeting and set some of them, or one, apart as teacher and blessed several others. Visited some others,

did considerable labor, set an orchard and put in some garden and some corn and sowed some barley, plowed some potatoes, made one cupboard, repaired one plow and watered my lucerne and barley. I did some trading and blessed the land even the whole country for the sake of Latter-day Saints. Surely it is a very good and a very large country prepared for the people and there is room for thousands of families where they can make themselves good homes and it is hoped the Saints will improve the opportunity and secure a large portion of the goodly land, the prospects are flattering for very good crops in this country this season.

My boys have a very nice crop in and they are laboring hard to water and take care of the same. The waters are very high this season and are fine. I had a very interesting, enjoyable good time while there with my family and friends. The Saints seem to be willing to serve the Lord and perform their duties. They have a Relief Society formed or organized with a good substantial president with very good counselors, or they ought to be for my wife Mary is her first counselor and according to her faith and works and her patriarchal blessing and my certain knowledge of her, she is a chartered, good woman, a faithful Latter-day Saint.

Our son Amos, as well as a great number of others from this settlement and county, have gone to Montana to help build a railroad and there is many being built these days. The

Gentiles are inspired to build roads for the benefit of the Saints, yes for the gathering of God's elect in the last days.

The Gentiles are building them for the purpose of making money. They care not for God, nor his people. They will not work for them only to be able to destroy them, but they will work hard for themselves and for their God. That God is money. But, the earth is the Lord's and the fullness thereof and all the cattle on a thousand hills and all the gold and silver is his also and he is about to rest these goods and things from the hands of the ungodly and place them in the hands of a righteous people that will serve God and keep his commandments.

The Lord has a great work on his hands to perform for he has sworn by himself (for there is none greater) that he will surely gather all Israel from all parts of the earth and all the islands of the seas. Consequently, he needs a great many railroads with a great many roads for many will have to travel on foot and pitch their tents by the way.

Now, we proposed to help the Lord do all we can in our weakness. To build up his kingdom and to bring forth his Zion and gather his elect in these last days. After a little when he has thoroughly chastened his Saints and purified his Church, he will show how he will redeem his Zion and set his Saints free that they may serve him and their shant be a dog to move his tongue against Zion, when there shall not be

any ungodly Gentile courts or judges to abuse our innocent women and children and fine and imprison men for keeping the commandments of God.

Still the work of prosecuting the polygamists is going on. The papers state of late there were 14 sentenced in one day to serve the term of five months or more in the penitentiary for living with their wives, but it is by the law (mob law).

June 16th. I leave my dear family and friends at Willow Creek for Utah. Had very good roads and good fine time except one accident. One wheel ran off of the boys wagon. We hunted for the burr but found it not, but the Lord helped us. He gave us another burr too large. We placed a leather inside it and turned it on. It worked well.

We made the trip in five days, traveled 200 miles or upwards. I stopped with Ely and family in Marsh Valley over the Sabbath and attended meetings with him and preached good to the Saints in that place, and partook of the Lord's supper with them. We arrived home at Hooper Tuesday evening, the 21st, found all well, felt very thankful to my God for his goodness to us on our way home.

June 22nd. I find myself at home again in Hooper with the crops looking better and the farm in better shape than I expected, but plenty of work to do. I set directly into work repairing pasture fences and preparing for watering. I am working hard, watering and attending crops. I learned that

Brother Higley is dead and buried. He suffered a great deal, poor soul, he was a very good man of long standing in the Church. A firm believer in the gospel who had a very extensive experience in the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. He was very industrious, a hard laborer and a very well-read and excellent researcher of the scriptures. A very kind husband and father to his children. He suffered much. He shall be saved and he will certainly receive a glorious reward, even a glorious resurrection. The Father, for Christ's sake, will forgive him all his sins and he shall be happy.

26th. The Sabbath, attended meeting, heard Elder Guiliams that had lately emerged from the pen. He gave us a detailed account, very particular of his treatment while there and of matters and things pertaining to that department. He talked very good, we were pleased to see him look and feel so well. We hope it a blessing to him.

27th. In Farmington, visiting with my beloved family there. Find them mostly well. Find my grandson Eugene Robinson very poorly. I administered to him for his restoration. We hope and pray for him that his faith fail not that he may recover and become well and sound again. Took breakfast with my beloved son and family Joseph Elijah, had a good chat with him, was pleased to see the marked improvement in his health. Was very happy to see and visit with my dear grandson Ebenezer Wilcox. He had just returned from a two year's mission

preaching the gospel of life and salvation to the Gentiles and of men that will receive it, that the Lord, our God, may gather out the honest in heart, even his elect for he willeth to save them, even all men if they will listen to the sweet invitations of the gospel of his son, Jesus Christ, which he sends unto them through his humble servants, the elders of Israel, even the sons of Ephraim, the horns of the unicorns which are to push the people together to the ends of the earth. He (Eugene) feels first rate, his heart is in his work and spirit of the gospel. If he continues faithful he will make a mighty man in Israel. He is a good boy and man. My wife and daughter Rosa came up to Hooper with me for a visit.

I strive to make myself useful in doing all the good I possibly can both in temporal labors and in spiritual labors also in teaching the people and also in administering blessings to the Saints and their children and in setting a good example, one worthy of imitation. I feel very much encouraged for Zion because of the marked improvements with the Saints, in some respects. We pray for them that they may still improve a great deal more. We feel they must most certainly become more punctual attending to their family duties, to their prayers, both in secret and family prayers and in observing the holy sabbath and in keeping their covenants and in paying their honest tithing and in obeying the celestial law of plural marriage and in strictly performing their duties to their wives and children

in that holy order and lastly, and not least in keeping strictly the Word of Wisdom. Inasmuch as they will do these things honestly and faithfully in the name of the Lord, they shall have health in their navels and marrow in their bones. The destroying angel shall pass by them and not destroy them. Also they shall become very intelligent and if they will not observe to do these things, to improve in those duties, and keep the words of wisdom strictly, they shall be visited of the Lord, his hand shall be laid upon them, even all of us that transgress God's holy laws. The destroying angel shall visit them and the grim messenger of death shall be commissioned and there shall be weeping and mourning and lamentation in Israel, even with and in the families of the Latter-day Saints and very many gravestones will be needed. For, saith the Lord, shall my people which have tasted of the good word of God and of the powers of the world to come, that have been instructed in the things of God, in the doctrines and principles of the gospel—if they heed not my holy laws and holy commandments, shall they escape chastisement? Verily no saith the Lord.

Would they have the Lord their God punish the ignorant and uncircumcised Gentiles with death and destruction by famines and pestilence and sword, with thunderings and lightnings, with earthquakes and whirlwinds and devouring flames? Verily not so until his Saints and Church have become pure and clean



before him, as gold seven times tried in the fire. For surely God has chosen his people in a furnace of affliction.

Now, my dear brethren and sisters, and wives and children, we must purify ourselves before the Lord and keep all his commandments that we may claim his promised protection and have faith and power to overcome all things.

June, 1887. Now, God's people shall be made willing in the day of his power. They shall be saved, but it shall be through faith and obedience and also shall all the wicked be cut off in the own due time of the Lord and they shall be cast into the prison and there shall be weeping and wailing and gnashing of teeth, while the Saints, those that prove themselves such shall be taken into mansions where there shall be light, liberty and peace and plenty to do to carry the work. That is, the work they should have done here on the earth and to make preparations for a glorious millennium, the peaceful reign of Christ here on this earth. Which event is very near and not very far off.

I would now say a few words with regard to myself. I can say my mind and body is in a very healthy condition. I can see God, in the sun, in the moon and in the starry heavens and in the earth also among and over the nations of the earth. Surely he is working marvelously among the people in preparing the Saints to take and possess the kingdom under the whole heavens and in multiplying them and in giving them peace

and prosperity and in spreading themselves abroad. Also in giving the Gentiles the loose halter, to see what they would do with God's holy people and with that holy instrument, the glorious Constitution, that sacred instrument, that inspired the fathers of this republic to pledge their sacred honors, their lives and their all to maintain and to keep sacred and inviolate that sacred instrument. They faithfully charged their children and their successors to do the same. Our fathers fought, they bled and many of them died to obtain that Constitution and liberty of speech of the press and to worship God according to the dictates of their own conscience and did bequeath to their posterity and successors that they should enjoy this very rich legacy. But, oh how far, how very far their successors have departed from the letter and spirit of that sacred instrument.

The history of this Church will tell a dreadful tale. It will tell of the martyrdom of the prophets, of the murdering of the Saints and the robbing and driving of them four times and also the murdering of our elders whilst in their fields of labor preaching the pure gospel of the Son of God to the world of mankind. Also the mighty persecutions brought to bear against our elders and also the mighty effort that was made in President Buchanan's day when he sent Johnson with an army to hang and destroy our leading men and to break up the Mormon organization that they might bring us

into bondage or drive us the fifth time from our hard earned homes. Also, the many ungodly, unconstitutional laws the lawmakers of these United States have made for the express purpose of destroying the Latter-day Saints. But behold ye the Father hath brought his poor and afflicted people out of bondage by the hand of his servant Brigham Young with a right hand and an outstretched arm unto these valleys of the mountains. Yes he has brought them here to stay and saith the prophets they shall never come under the Gentile's yoke nor into bondage again.

Now these, our Gentile friends, have become our very bitter enemies. They have not only made those unconstitutional laws but they have selected men, wicked men of the worst type, and sent them here to govern us and to judge us and to execute those laws. They do justify them in selecting the wickedest men for grand and petite jurors and they have arrested and sent men and have sentenced them to the full extent of the law. Now our mighty government has presumed to measure arms with the Almighty which is no less nor more than the Mormon's God. He (our God) says to his Saints, you shall do a certain work or you shall be damned. Saith the Lord, but this mighty nation says you shall not do that work for if you do you shall be imprisoned and fined severely. Hence, this mighty raid against the polygamist portion of this community. But what shall it prove? It shall prove a great blessing to the

Latter-day Saints. It shall terminate in glorifying God and in overthrowing of this government and in the destruction of this mighty nation, as the Lord God liveth. Yet, before this nation goes out of power, we do predict that they shall do one good thing for Utah. They shall admit her as a state. She shall become a free and an independent state. Utah for Utah and the Mormons.

June 29th. I wrote one letter to Aunt Mary and sent it. I took Aunt Rinda to Janie's for a visit.

July 2nd. I brought my daughter Janie and her mother to Hooper to celebrate the 4th of July. This 4th is the 111th anniversary of the independence of these United States of America. This sacred day was thoroughly and heartedly celebrated in north Hooper by Bishop Belnap and his ward. Now Hooper has good reason to be proud. For surely they can boast of a very well uniformed and well disciplined brass band which did certainly discourse very sweet and heavenly music on that day and upon that occasion. The ward turned out in mass and did justice to the occasion. They did very well.

July 16th. I drove to Farmington on my way south and found several of our people and children sick. I administered to several of them in the name of the Lord and some got better. I visited with several of my children and friends, had a good visit with my old friends and acquaintance Keddick [or

Reddick] Allred and his first wife who was Lucy Hoyt. They live in Sanpete County. They are on a visiting tour.

Many of our grandchildren are sick with whooping cough. We have administered to them. We hope they will live. If our children and friends would keep the Word of Wisdom strictly we could promise them in the name of the Lord.

July 23rd. I drove to Salt Lake City. Took my wife Laurinda. We purpose to take a visiting tour south and to be gone a few days. Took dinner with Aunt Dawn Cummings and heard that our beloved President, John Taylor, is very sick and that his recovery is very doubtful. We hope he will not suffer very long. We feel very, very sad over the prospect of losing so good a man from our head, God forbid unless he is wanted up yonder. We feel and say the will of the Father be done. He (John Taylor) is a master, he has fought the good fight, he has nearly finished his work, he has kept the faith, henceforth there is laid up a crown of glory for him in heaven, his eternal abode. I wish our prospects were as good as his. Let him depart in peace and never again be abused by his enemies.

Drove into West Jordan, stopped with Bishop William Bills and family. They treat us very kindly. We have a very interesting visit with them.

July 27th, Sunday. It is very warm, dry weather. We attend ward meeting with him and family. There were a very good number of people in attendance. He has a very good ward.

They passed the Lord's supper and I was called upon to speak. I felt very thankful for the opportunity. I solicited an interest in their prayers that the spirit of God might rest down upon their speaker that he might be inspired to speak the things of God and that they might be edified, interested and comforted. And behold ye, the Holy Ghost did rest down upon the speaker and while explaining or trying to explain some things they were opened to my understanding with a light and clearness that I have never beheld before. Consequently, I was very much interested and had good liberty teaching them the duty and importance of deacons and also of teachers and how they should perform their duties and also upon the subject and importance of baptism, using it as the figure of speech showing up the importance and necessity of death and the resurrection. Also setting forth the order and organization of this Church of Christ that its organization was an exact pattern of the organization in the heavens and that the teachings, doctrine and organization of any other denomination was nowhere in comparison to the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. These people are the only ones that dare to promise the Holy Ghost to baptized believers and that we did promise the Holy Ghost and did explain to them the office and work of the Holy Ghost testifying firmly that the Holy Ghost was actually given to the Saints. I did testify that it should show them things to come. I rehearsed to them a heavenly vision

wherein a holy temple was seen and that it was actually built and finished upon the consecrated spot in Jackson County, Missouri and that it was entered into and received revelations from Almighty God and the glory of God was seen in that house. Yet, behold ye, that house is not yet built but as the Lord lives, it shall be built in this generation and the pure in heart shall see the face of the Father in that house and live. I showed them how the Prophet Joseph did see the Father and the Son and that the holy angels did visit and instruct him and that he, Joseph, was a very great and holy man of God and showed the need of Joseph testifying and dying for a very important purpose, even as Jesus died for an important purpose. Until Jesus died and went and opened the prison doors, they could never be opened, neither until Joseph died could the prison doors be opened for he held the keys of this last dispensation and after his death he went and opened the prison doors and started Mormon meetings there and never until he came was that door and that his testimony was not in force until he, the testator, was dead and sealed it with his own blood. Many things we told them which we have not time to say here. Also we did prove by and say unto them many good things that God had brought this people and that this people is here to stay. That Brigham Young was that prophet like unto Moses to bring this people out of bondage, that the Latter-day Saints should never come under the Gentile yoke

again. That they should not be hindered in the good work of building holy temples, working in them, and in their increase and improving and spreading abroad and in opening up new farming and forming new settlements.

From the signs of the times and workings of the spirit, we expect soon to be admitted into the Union, free and independent as a sovereign state. And many more good things we told them.

June 25th, Monday. This day we celebrated a very memorable day, a day that should always be remembered and with humble praise and thanksgiving to Almighty God for all true Latter-day Saints and their children after them forever, because he had brought them and their generations with them out of bondage and planted them into so goodly a land. We had a good time and visit with them.

A good warm day and we traveled and as we travel we behold with much pleasure much interesting scenery and many beautiful and interesting towns, homes and cities. We put up with our old friends the beloved John Gleason and family and found them well and in very good circumstances with a good farm, good, crops of hay and grain. I attended celebration with him in their beautiful town, Pleasant Grove, in the afternoon and had a good time and a very interesting visit with him and family. Promised to call again.



June 26th. Passed through the large and beautiful cities of Provo, Springville, Spanish Fork and in Payson we stopped with Brother and Sister [Brigham?]. Found them well and a good visit with them. Found them good in the faith and with a considerable of fruit in their orchard. In almost all the valley of Utah their fruit were blasted with late frosts. This [Payson] is also a large and beautiful city, population 1500.

June 27th. This morning the report says our venerable President is dead. He has gone to rest, he died easy at five minutes to eight o'clock Monday afternoon. So that the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints are called to mourn the loss of their third president, prophet, seer and revelator. Surely a great man has left us. We sustain a great loss, but it is wisdom in the Father to take him. His work is done and well done on this earth. He has fought the good fight, he has kept the faith, he has died a martyr, he shall wear a master's crown, receive his kingdom and crown, shall receive a glorious reward according to his works and it shall be well with him.

July, 1887. We drove to Santaquin. Called on several brethren and agreed to call and see them when we return. Put up with Sam Foster and family, found them well, they were very much pleased to see us and we them. She is marry to a good man by the name of David Ostler and she has six children. Their names are Harriett, Maria, Anna, William, her youngest is Lula. A very nice and interesting family. We enjoyed ourselves

and visit with them very much. I administered to a very sick child while there. He got better. And also to several sisters that were afflicted.

Nephi is a very interesting town, a large city with a population of about\_\_\_ inhabitants.

[Editor's note: no population number is given.]

July 29th. The funeral of President Taylor. Drove to Sanpete Valley through several beautiful towns, their flags at half-mast, their public and some private houses draped in mourning. A very solemn day. We mourn, but we have a bright hope of the glorious resurrection.

Stopped with Bishop Reddick Allred's family. Were very kindly entertained by them. Feel very thankful to our God for his goodness to us and ours and to his people for he is blessing them abundantly. They are becoming wealthy. We fear many will apostatize and forsake the Lord their God.

July 30th. Saturday, drove through Ephraim, a beautiful city of 2,000 inhabitants, and passed the beautiful temple at Manti. Stopped with Brother and Sister James and Rebecca Wareham, good faithful Latter-day Saints. They received us very kindly. He is sick and has been for a long time, but he's not that fast. By his request I anointed and blessed him. He felt a little better. We had a good visit with them, we hope he will recover. He is a worthy president of the high priest quorum of Manti. The people in these counties are doing well. They

shall be blessed and abundantly rewarded. They are pushing their temple marvelously. They will soon reach completion. God Almighty bless them in their mighty good work.

The marshalIs are very busy these days. They have arrested several of late in this place and also in Davis since our departure. They have captured our worthy and very much respected President William Smith of Centerville. He has remained firm at home and with his people laboring faithfully for the benefit and salvation of the Saints. A few days since, our worthy brother and near neighbor, Ezra T. Clark, came home hale and hearty from the pen where he has been confined for six months. We were happy to see and shake hands with him. Once more God bless him, for we love and so respect all good men that are firm and willing not to go back and discard their wives, their religion, their covenant and their God.

August 1st. Election day for Utah, and a lively day it was with the people generally in all the cities and towns in the territory and the people's ticket was largely in the excess except in some mining camps. But as the general thing, it passed off very quietly, but largely in favor of the Constitution.

While in Manti, we visited with several of our friends, went to the house of and had a good visit with our old friend and worthy brother Patriarch James Works and with our aged Brother and Sister Smith. She repaired immediately to her kind bishop, Reed, and he gave her a recommend for her man

and myself and wife to visit the beautiful temple of Manti in the tops of the mountains, or rather, it is high and lifted up on an eminence, beautiful and grand. It affords as much joy to look upon at a distance. But to enter into and behold some of the beautifulest rooms we ever saw, and to contemplate it as a house of God and for the holy angels, and for men and women that are worthy to enter therein secluded from the outside world that they may there be brought the things of God and receive their washings and anointings, even their holy endowments and sealings for themselves and for their venerable dead. Even the contemplation afforded us much joy almost respectable and full of glory. We were admitted into the temple and very cordially shown and passed through all the rooms that were permitted to visitors and we gave the "widow's mite" which will help a little and get our names enrolled in the big book. We visited the house in the forepart of the day. Sister Smith gave us a good dinner and we drove 15 miles to Chester, put up for the night with Bishop Allred's family again on the way to Castle Valley. We were very kindly entertained by them. We told Sister Allred to write to her husband, and tell him to stop with our people in or at Farmington as long as he wished to do so.

August 3rd. Wednesday morning, left Chester, drove through three very interesting and nice towns, namely Springtown, Mount Pleasant, and Fairview, then up a canyon

into the tops of the mountains. A very interesting scenery and a very passable road. Saw an immense quantity of timber and splendid grass in abundance and plenty of water of the best quality. We camped two nights in the mountains and dropped down into Castle Valley. Found it a big desert, it with its surroundings only where the water was applied and that beautifully. It would produce very good crops of fruit, grains and grass. Found our son Solomon and family in the city of Huntington, with castles around the valley. He and his family well and very much pleased to see father again.

Attended meeting on the 7th, Sabbath, partook of the sacrament with the Saints of that place and did preach to them the holy gospel and prophesied good for Israel. While there helped Sally gather some hay and built for them a small house, and did some writing.

He (Solomon) was taken sick the evening we arrived there. Was sick all the next day and not hardly able to be out at all. In the evening I anointed him with holy oil in the name of the Lord and laid my hands upon him and he received a great blessing for he was healed and the next day, Sunday, he went to his meeting and remained well until we left.

We had a very excellent good visit with them and attended a quarterly conference which was held in Orangeville, a nice, thrifty little town in a good large bowery.

I would liked very much to have occupied a portion of time in their conference in speaking to them in the name of the Lord. But as I received no introduction, I was not called upon, but the elders were very interesting in their remarks. They talked like Saints and they looked like Saints for they are very good looking people. Well, glad, intelligent looking and as the spirit moved upon me I blessed their valleys, their waters, their timbers, their rocks, their mountains and all things pertaining to them and their country. While we were there we had some very excellent rains, although their country looks so very uninviting it will certainly be strengthened and blessed and the Saints will certainly, through their faith and industry become very wealthy and build for themselves very beautiful and substantial homes, meetinghouses, and tabernacles. Yes and may an holy temple, yes one at least.

August 18th. I have written two good letters and mailed them today, one to Mary and family and one to my daughter Mary Jane South. We left Huntington and passed up Huntington Canyon. A very good road with some bad places, my son Solly (Solomon) with his family with us. He is to pilot us and be in our company over the mountains and he wishing to visit their family in Manti. We were favored of the Lord, camped out one night in the mountains, we enjoyed ourselves well, splendid feed and water for our animals.

We passed some coal mines, saw and shingle mills. We stopped with Brother Riley Howard's family in Mount Pleasant. They were holding conference in Sanpete.

19th, Saturday. Take our leave of Solly and family, blessed them in the name of the Lord. They pass on to Manti and we over and down to Nephi. Put up with Ann and family.

20th, Sunday morning. Preparing ourselves for meeting, visit Brother Andrew Love, an old friend and acquaintance. Attend meeting the Nephites in their roomy tabernacle. A good house of respectable Saints and I was invited onto to the stand and introduced to the congregation. I occupied the afternoon in speaking to the people, told them that we were ministers of God, that we were engaged in a great work and that the angel had been sent from heaven and with a dispensation of the gospel. That this was the seventh and the last dispensation of the gospel to the children of men on this earth. Showed them that God had committed a dispensation of the gospel to Adam after the fall and to Enoch also, and to Noah, and also to Abraham, Moses, also to Jesus and his apostles and lastly to Joseph Smith and his apostles. That the kingdom of God had come this time to earth to stay, that it should stand, forever that it should break in pieces every other kingdom and grind them to powder. That this people had come here into these mountains to stay and they never should be moved or driven again from their homes and from

their lovely temples. That Brigham Young was that prophet that God has raised up like unto Moses to lead his people out of bondage, that he had led them out of bondage and planted them here in these mountains and that this people had never been in bondage since they left Nauvoo. That they are not in bondage today and that they never shall be in bondage again. We told them this people should become wealthy, yes rich, that they must certainly be tried in riches for God had said it, but that I greatly feared and trembled for his people and that many would apostatize. Yea, I feared half or more would leave the ranks of the Saints and be lost. We told them that this people were under the rod and they should be chastened until the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints had become thoroughly cleansed, until every unworthy member, or dry branch was taken away and that a thorough and mighty test was surely coming which would split them out by the wholesale. I told them that the good work of the Lord should go on, that this people should continue building holy temples and that they should hold possession of them and work in them until the Lord should come.

We did exhort the Saints to diligence and faithfulness and not neglecting their prayers, pay their honest tithing, keep all their covenants and the Word of Wisdom strictly. Also, they should keep the Sabbath day holy, the fast days also, pay their fast offerings and verily not one of them that would do



these things shall fall. Many more things we said unto them in the name of the Lord and by the power of the Holy Ghost. We had liberty and good flow of spirit. We told them the truth for the Holy Spirit beareth record and we rejoice greatly in the Holy One of Israel.

We traveled the length of and through almost all the towns of Utah, Juab, Sanpete and considerable in every stake. Called on Brother Simons, our faith doctor. He blessed me on account of my deafness. He had instructed me how to proceed, he said I would get better of my deafness. He also gave me some instruction how to proceed with my little grandson, poor afflicted Joel Rose. He sent a handkerchief to put next to his person and that I should visit him after a certain set time after I arrived home. The exact time was set that his mother and I should sit one on either side of him for some time. Then I should administer to him and he would be there and that he would use me as proxy.

We visited some with Brother Stickney and family. I administered to one of his wives, she was sick. She got better.

We stopped with and had a very good visit with Brother John Gleason [or Clayson] and family and also with Sister Laury. That was Bishop Hunter's wife. She came with us to Salt Lake City to visit her sick daughter. We stopped with our beloved sister Annette Cummings and arrived home in

Farmington Sunday evening, the 27th. Found our children and grandchildren that had been so very sick with whooping cough comparatively well. Felt so happy and thankful to Almighty God for his protecting care and great goodness to us and ours. We were gone one month and four days.

[EDITOR'S NOTE: Great Grandfather has dates on the left-hand margins of his pages and in view of the fact that this last trip took him over a month apparently these dates are writing dates and not actual dates when the events occurred.]

I delivered the handkerchief that Brother Simons sent to our dear afflicted Joel. His mother fastened it to his little bosom and he rested good that night and had no cramping as he had had formerly for a long time before. On Tuesday evening, the 29th, at half past eight p.m., the time set and agreed upon with Brother Simons, I visited him, seating myself on the one side of him and his mother on the other side of Joel for half an hour or more, conversing about him and his sufferings and other matters pertaining to her family and children. She there told me that I had promised her in a blessing on her head that she should have power to heal the sick in her house and that in many instances when her little children were afflicted with a fever and great pain, she had laid her hands upon their heads, and blessed them and prayed to the Lord for them and they were healed instantly. So, she knew that she possessed that gift from God. But, when she laid her hands on Joel, he

never would get better but if anything he would get worse which thing caused her to marvel. Still, she had faith that she could heal her other children but not him.

According to agreement, I blessed Joel as proxy instead of Brother Simons.

I find it in my journal written thus while in Farmington last winter that I received a word from the Lord in regard to that child that we should bless that child and ordain him to the holy priesthood and dedicate him unto the Lord and leave him in his hands. Further, that inasmuch as his father and mother would covenant and agree before the Lord, that they would keep the Word of Wisdom strictly and the commandments and they should fast three days, advising them to get what help they could in the past, then that boy should commence to get well and should continue to mend until he should become well and sound. But his father said he thought he had gone so long that he could not recover. But, I do firmly believe, had they been willing to have made the sacrifice and tried the experiment, the child would certainly have been healed. It certainly is a mystery to us for this child is so afflicted, but we hope it will be revealed to us some day.

September 10th and 11th. Drove to Hooper, visited some with our friends and children. Worked very faithfully on the farm a few days. Attended a stake conference, held in a beautiful grove in Farmington. We were blessed with some

very lovely weather also with five very interesting discourses from the following brethren, namely Doctor Seymor Young, and our delegate Cain, Brother Cornwall [Carnwel], Jacob Gates and Apostle Heber J. Grant. They were all very spirited and instructive. The bishops also gave very favorable reports of their respective wards. I anointed and administered to our afflicted son and brother, Eugene Robinson. He will get well, we hope. I anointed and blessed my son Willey's wife Diana, she is very poorly. She is better and will get well. Also administered to Sister Baker's baby. It was sick and will get well. (This was on the 13th and 14th.)

Took some melons to Farmington. We loaded my wagon with peaches and drove them to Parley's Park and sold out in Centerville.

September 18th, Sunday. Attended meeting with the Saints in that place and was called to the stand and preached the gospel to the people. Had good liberty and they seemed very much interested. The bishop requested me to come and preach to them again. Partook of a very excellent dinner with Hiram Workman and family. He has a very excellent wife.

I stopped with Brother Theodore Johnson and in the evening gave to his wife, a very promising young woman, a good sound patriarchal blessing. Her mother, being present, was very much interested, very kindly invited me to stop and make myself at home with them if I should ever come that way again,

that I should be very welcome. I have many invitations of that kind which make me feel very humble and very grateful to my Heavenly Father and to my dear friends also. Feel myself greatly blessed, the Lord is with my all the time.

September 19th. Drove to Farmington, we loaded again with fruit and I made another trip. Sold out. Visited with some of my old friends and returned to Hooper. Made two more trips to Summit County. Took some fruit and molasses. Sold and brought home two loads of coal and blessed Sister Croft. She was very sick. She will get well.

October 7th, 1887. Visited Eugene Robinson. He is yet poorly but some better. I drove to Salt Lake City, drove my wagon into Sister Smith's and took with me my horse feed, provisions, and bedding and attended a very rich and interesting conference held in the mammoth tabernacle. There were six or seven of the Twelve Apostles in attendance. Yes, we were favored with the privilege of attending the 57th Semi-Annual Conference of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints and we do consider it a very important and interesting day with this Church and people of Latter-day Saints. Many of our dear brethren are in exile and many also imprisoned for keeping the commandments of God. A mighty nation, with as it were with a drawn sword unsheathed drawn over our heads threatening us with annihilation and other destruction unless we will renounce our holy religion and deny our God which

thing we cannot afford to do, no never. Our God is greatly blessing this people and pouring out his holy spirit upon his Saints and multiplying them greatly both in numbers and in spirit and blessings and in temporal blessings also. For surely, he has promised to make them rich and also we look for a great and mighty test prepared for this people. Which test, in that this mighty nation with drawn sword will threaten this people with other destruction. For their armies shall be very great and terrible and they will offer protection to every soul that will come out and renounce Mormonism.

Yes, if we will forsake the Lord and his cause and kingdom and come over on the devil's side and join them, they will protect us, saying all those that will not come over on their side shall utterly be destroyed. for they have decreed in their hearts or shall manifest by the laws that they have made and those laws which they shall hereafter enact against us, and by their armies they shall send, that Mormonism shall be a thing of the past. That all Mormon organizations shall be burst up and cease forever. Which thing they will perform if they prove to be the strongest party.

Now this will be the question with some, yes with many so that many will probably leave our ranks, yes go to leave us to perish by reason that they have not kept the Word of Wisdom, neither the commandments and laws of the gospel as they should have done. They have failed to get the spirit of

the Lord which bringeth a testimony and giveth a knowledge of the work of God on the earth. That the God of Abraham is with this people so that they cannot be destroyed, neither hindered in performing the work of God on the earth. For our God shall come out of his hiding place and shall surely vex the nation, even this Gentile nation, in his wrath, for his anger shall be greatly kindled against them.

[Editor's note: Here again, J.L.R. repeats his predictions of destruction and the blessings to the people, the members of the Church if they will live the commandments.]

Now, let us return to our 57th Semi-Annual Conference. It was a success. We might say or write pages of interesting matter concerning it. But one of the most interesting things, or circumstances, was a very lengthy, intelligent epistle from President Wilford Woodruff. His person was seen in the afternoon of Sunday the 9th of October in the President's stand in the mammoth tabernacle and his precious voice was heard by the thousands, even a vast multitude was greatly diverted and pleased again to see his face and hear his voice. It was more than music to them. He talked to some length, said the last time he had met with the people in that large house some two or three years ago. President John Taylor was with us there but he had done his work and had gone to join those above and that he, himself, was the last one of the Twelve yet living that received their endowments from the hands or by

the Prophet Joseph Smith in Nauvoo. And also had received from him and under his hands all the keys and powers and authority of the holy priesthood that he (the prophet) had received to carry on the work of the kingdom of God on the earth and had given unto us a solemn charge—saying upon you Twelve, even upon your shoulders, I bestow the burden of this kingdom, for I am going to rest exhorting us to be courageous to round up our shoulders, to bear the burden, to bear this the mighty kingdom of God on earth.

President Woodruff occupied some half hour in talking to us. We enjoyed it hugely, and then he was gone and we saw him no more. But, we hear from him from time to time. The marshalls were watching for him and Brother Snow but found them not.

Now, Brother Erastus Snow had been preaching long and good to the Latter-day Saints the afternoon of the previous day. Now the Twelve, and brethren, talked very encouraging and good to the Latter-day Saints.

October 23rd, Sunday. Attended meeting in Farmington, visited several of our children and administered to my daughter Josephine Rose. She was very sick. Also, administered to and blessed Eugene Robinson. We hope he is improving, some better.

My good wife Laurinda came to Hooper to stop with me a while at least. She is a good cook. A very interesting, good



Latter-day Saint. God bless her. Let her live yet many years upon this earth oh Lord, and see many good days.

October 18th, 1887. I would now record a very remarkable circumstance as I was called to administer to a very sick child, a daughter of Sister Ann Parker Wadsworth. I felt to enter deeply into sympathy with them and promised to do all I could to help them save their child.

I was sent for and while on my way there had very serious reflections. It occurred to my mind some of the words that were spoken when I was ordained a patriarch. It was said that whomsoever you bless, shall be blessed and whomsoever you curse, shall be cursed and whatsoever promise to anyone in the name of the Lord and by the virtue of my calling and priesthood, it should be verified.

Now, I tried to reason with the Lord as I knew I was clean before him. Therefore, I besought the Lord earnestly that he would heal that child and restore it to health and cause it to live to the joy and satisfaction of its parents.

I came into the house, saw its mother and several others in tears. I looked upon the child and verily it seemed to be struck with death and I discovered there was little or no faith in the house unless I possessed some.

I prayed for the child and waited some time. Besought the Lord earnestly that he would show me that he would teach me what to say. I knew verily there was power with God to heal if

there was faith it should be done and I tried to exercise faith for that child. I asked the Lord to give unto me the Holy Ghost and put words into my mouth what I should say and I would lay my hands upon the child and leave it with the Lord.

We did so and promised the child it should live and grow up to womanhood and become a mother in Israel, and there was no condition, nor may be so, and we naturally supposed the child should rally and live and get well.

I told the mother I would do all I could for her. I tried to encourage them to exercise faith and it certainly would be all right. I related several remarkable cases of healing that I had been knowledged to hoping it would strengthen their faith and encourage them some.

I left the house feeling first rate and on my way home felt wonderful happy and said the child will certainly get well. But to my astonishment the next morning was told the child died at 12 o'clock that night, October 19th.

Now, says the tempter, see how much you know. You said that child should live and grow up to womanhood. Now see where you are, where your prophesy is now. How can you depend on your God. You might as well give it up. If your God will deceive you in that way.

Surely it was a great trial to me. I felt bad over it and said Lord, what can it mean, why was it that I should be so

deceived. Said I, would like to know, oh Lord, wilt thou tell me.

And it came to pass after two or three days the Lord did tell me. He showed it up plain to my understanding and when I saw it my heart was full of gratitude and thanksgiving to Almighty God my Heavenly Father, for surely thou art a revealer of secrets, full of mercy and truth. Thou art almighty, full of wisdom and truth. I will speak for thy goodness and praise thy name forever more, amen.

And it came to pass the Father did reveal unto me through the medium of the Holy Ghost on this wise. That child is not dead, but sleepeth. It liveth and when the trump shall sound for that kind of dead, to awake, it shall come forth. It shall wake up and shall look sickly and poor. It shall look just as it did when it went to sleep and died, as you term it. It (the child) shall be the same size and its mother, if she is worthy, shall receive it into her arms and shall nourish and cherish and it shall be healed and become healthy and grow up to womanhood as you promised it, not one jot or tittle shall fail of all you promised it. If her own mother is not worthy, a mother shall be prepared to receive it and raise it up and she shall be called a mother in Israel.

Now, saith the Lord, in my wisdom, chose this way to fulfil your words with regard to that child, to try your faith as well. Verily, you will find in your writing it is written that I the Lord

shall visit the families of the Latter-day Saints and inasmuch as they do not observe to keep the Word of Wisdom and my commandments better, that there should be weeping and mourning in the House of Israel and families of the Latter-day Saints and there should be need of many gravestones. And now, saith the Lord, if my elders should have power to heal the sick, then how would that prophesy be fulfilled. Be thou faithful and it shall be well with thee for I will reveal unto you many things pertaining to my kingdom and people. For verily, I say unto you that all the meek and obedient shall be visited of the Lord. Their understanding shall reach unto heaven and they shall comprehend many things pertaining to this earth also.

Now my soul doth magnify the Lord for I know that my Redeemer liveth, I will praise his name forever. He shall reign over my people on the earth. Verily, the time is nigh, yea very near, when the prophet Joseph shall come. He shall receive his body, his martyred fleshy body. It shall contain the very scars where the bullets pierced his body and caused his death. Yea as Jesus carries his scars, the nails, the spear which opened the vein so that every drop of blood was extracted from his precious body, as the prophet Joseph, also, and they too shall carry the scars in their bodies to all eternity so there shall be no cause of doubt, nor chance for deception.

It shall come to pass, the Prophet Joseph, the seer, the great and mighty man, the man that heads the dispensation of the fullness of times, the man that helped to organize and build this mighty earth of ours or upon which we dwell, the man that hath been elected lieutenant general, the head general, the commander in chief of the armies of Israel, and the armies of Israel shall be organized and come under the head of the Nauvoo Legion. Now legion signifies many without number, verily I say unto you the Nauvoo Legion was organized in the city of Joseph, called Nauvoo, and the Prophet Joseph was elected lieutenant general, and now verily, he Joseph, shall hold that position in and through all eternity and the Nauvoo Legion shall remain in and through all eternity. The house and sons of Jacob is God's and they all shall belong to the Nauvoo Legion.

Now, the time is near, yea very nigh, when the gospel shall be preached to the Lamanites in great power. The spirit of God shall be poured out upon them and they shall listen and obey and the spirit of the mission shall rest upon them for they shall avenge the blood of the prophets, Joseph and Hyrum, and Zion shall be redeemed. The Prophet Joseph shall in person be the head general. He shall order the whole affair and his blood shall be avenged.

November, 1887. We went to Farmington, attended a very interesting meeting. The presidency of the stake was in atten-

dance. They seemed to be very meek and the elders seemed very humble and talked very good and encouraging to the Saints. The choir sang with a spirit and the understanding also. It was very marvelous, a very interesting meeting.

I again anointed and laid my hands upon the head of Eugene Robinson and blessed him and called upon the name of the Lord to heal him by his power and his holy angels to come and administer to him and that he should be healed, and he felt much better.

I took a trip into Morgan County and find there a sickness called diphtheria in the worst form which proved fatal taking from several families two and three of their numbers. This is in south Morgan City. I visited my son-in-law, Frederick Clark, and my beloved daughter Emma Sophia, his wife. While there, musing in my bed in their home, had some of the most interesting and the purest reflections I ever had in my life. It was on the subject of the turning key, when the kingdom should be rent from all Gentiles and placed upon Israel and remain with that house and people forever. For the time is near. That happy time when Christ shall come on earth to reign for the thousand years in which time a great work shall be performed in preparation of the people and this earth. In this time, thousands of temples shall be built and God shall visit them and many thousands of Saints, sons and daughters,

of Zion shall be working in them performing a very important mission.

I also passed up into Summit County and also transacted some temporal business. Had an excellent good time in visiting some of the Saints.

November 20, 1887. Sunday, we attend meetings in Hooper. A very good house of respectable Latter-day Saints. The sacrament was administered and we were treated with a very excellent good discourse from Elder Francis M. Brown from Ogden. He related some of his experiences and very energetically, plainly and honestly taught us or preached to us pure and holy gospel of the Son of God.

November 25th. We received word that our beloved daughter Josephine Rose was very sick. She had just been delivered of a son, her ninth child, and that several of our grandchildren were sick. We went down immediately, found it even so. I administered to my grandson and several of our grandchildren that were very sick and I returned home to Hooper.

[Editor's note: On several pages in his late November writings, Joseph Lee Robinson discusses in detail the organization of the Church and the duties of the various offices within the Church. These writings are based upon and in accordance with instructions in the Doctrine and Covenants.]

January 1888. The presidency of this stake of Zion has appointed a two days meeting to be held in this, the Hooper Ward. They were in attendance and it was an excellent meeting. The spirit of God was poured out upon President (Denney) and on the elders and people. It was a very good meeting, indeed.

I enter upon this New Year with pleasure and delight, because God is with this people and we feel to serve him with all our might. If it be possible, to do better than we have done for the year past. My sons Jedediah and George Clawson and grandson Joseph West came here on a visit last week. The boys to do some work on our house. They drove some cattle for me to winter. Joseph A., my grandson, a very fine interesting young man. He is attending, or going to the Provo Academy. On vacation, he is to visit here and he, himself, and William went up to Morgan on a visit today. He seemed to enjoy himself well while with us. The boys, while here, built us a stairway and did some painting and other work. They are good boys.

January 3rd. I wrote and mailed two letters. One to Mary in the north and one to Mary Jane in the south.

January 5th, fast day. We attend meetings. A house full, a good meeting, a very liberal portion of the spirit. We had a house full this evening, William Baker, Charles (Turk), Jedediah



and George and Lee and Willy with all their families and Aunt Rinda got us a royally good supper.

January 6th. The winter is fast upon us and we gather the most of our stock because of the cold weather. The boys finish up their job and are preparing for home to Farmington. All is well.

January 13th. We receive a good letter from Aunt Mary. Amos is on the road. We fear he will freeze. We receive a letter from Charles E. Robinson from New York. He is trying to trace out the Robinson records and he wants a genealogy of my family. He sent to me blanks for me to fill out for my own family, also for my father and grandfathers.

January 19th. Received two letters from Amos with a \$25 check. He is all right but says there is a large amount of sickness among the children mostly. Several have died causing much weakness and grief with the parents and friends. We will mention one family in particular, Brother John McGreger. They have been called to part with five of their children. We feel to sympathize with them very much. May the Lord comfort them.

*February 1st, 1888*

February 1st, 1888. Received a letter from my daughter, Josephine Rose. They are mourning the loss of their youngest,

a very promising bright child, the first one they have ever buried, their ninth child. We sympathize with them in their bereavement and we ask God to bless them and give unto them comfort and enable them to repent of all their sins and become as pure as that child and endure in faith and good works unto the end in order that they may be as sure of salvation as that child is.

Then they have, cause to rejoice, for surely, if that mother proves worthy to receive that child again when it shall wake up, for the trump shall sound, yes, for that kind of dead and it shall come forth. It shall wake up and look just as it did when it was laid down. So, it shall want a mother to receive it, nourish it, and cherish it. And she (the mother) shall raise it up to womanhood and inasmuch as the Holy Ghost has promised that children, such as this child, shall receive it just whatsoever was promised it and then her joy shall be full. We shall say, and verily, in the fear of God, the same shall be verified with regard to her lost child.

February. We attend fast meeting, a very good meeting. We talked good to the Saints. Amos talked good to us all also. Jeddy and George came and helped us some with some painting on our house. We had a good visit with them. They are very good.

Preparing my family genealogy to send to Charles E. Robinson. I also went to Sister Henry Manning's and gave

to Sister Mary Ann Manning Robinson a good healthy, sound patriarchal blessing. We administered to a great many sick, children mostly, we take pleasure in blessing them, innocent children of the Most High.

February 14th. We received five Perry's magazines and Deseret News. Christmas gets us that and Brother F. S. Johnson gave us a book, titled The Apocryphal New Testament, a wonderful good book. It speaks largely on Jesus Christ, of his infancy and early days so that we are blessed with an abundance of good reading matter. We also take the Juvenile Instructor. The snow is gone here except drifts.

February 18th. My birthday. It is as I dreamed last night, snowing all day. I, at our place, am very busy all day reading good books. Felt very happy and comfortable thinking, oh how good the Lord has been to me that he had so graciously spared so unworthy a servant as I for seventy and seven years, that he had been with me most of that time. That he had imparted information to me, so many rich blessings that he had revealed to me and to the world of mankind the fullness of his everlasting gospel in its fullness. Very particularly for the law of celestial marriage including plurality of wives that has given to me by law and revelation so many amiable, good looking, honorable daughters of Zion for wives. Also that the Lord has so graciously given so many, such good, well disposed, honorable children and also so many good, honorable sons-in-

law and daughters-in-law and also a host of bright, intelligent, grand and great grandchildren. It begins to put me in mind of the hosts of Israel.

Now, while reflecting on these important and very interesting matters, it almost surprised me, now thinks I, wonder if my children and friends don't think they will surprise me today, it being my birthday. But thinks I, guess they won't. I had not seen any person come in, had heard no noise, not a thing.

Come, father, says one, we want you to go into Laurey's room. She says, you have not been in her room today. Well says I, I will a little while.

My wife, with brush in hand gave my hair a little touch. I rose up and went toward the door not in the least of seeing any person except some of the family but you may judge of my surprise when the door opened I saw the room literally full of people. Well, well said I, what can this mean. Truly, I was so surprised that I hardly knew what to say, and while my surprise was way up, my son Jeddy says to me, Look here Father, pointing to a beautiful piece of furniture. I looked at it. What said I is that, an organ? No he says, look here, dropping at the same time the front door. What I saw was a writing table and seeing the drawer and place for books and shelves and papers, I saw at a glance what it was but had not time to say anything. He then opened a drawer, look here he says.

What is this for says I. This is all yours, see here, a fine suit of clothes, slippers and socks. All this is yours he exclaimed with a look of high pleasure. But with myself, surprise and wonder and astonishment mixed with a thought, is it possible? This thing I had wanted so bad and a nice suit of clothes in the bargain made ready for me.

Oh God, I thank thee. Wilt thou bless these my dear children. Wilt thou provide for them. May they never want, that through their faith and diligent industry they may always have, and to spare.

Now, says Jeddy, let us go right upstairs, you put on these clothes, see if they fit. Yes, says Joseph E. and others, go and put these on. So upstairs we clamor like little innocent children. I, feeling so happy and the children feeling so very good. When tried on, all fit to a tee, clothes, slippers, socks and all. Then the boys got up a program for the evening exercise. Brother E. Rose, Joseph and others got up the program. Then supper, and a splendid one too. We had a feast, a royal supper. Thank God and all the good people that helped get it up. We will now insert the program.

Program rendered at the 77th birthday of Brother Robinson, February 18th, 1888. Supper at 6:30 o'clock p.m. Song by the group with organ. Speech by C. Kirkham on the Word of Wisdom. A tune by the band. Harmonica solo by Frank Steed. Recitation by G. A. Robinson. Song by Miss Mary Robinson.

Recitation by Miss Maggie Wilcox. Song by Mr. and Mrs. J. E. Robinson, speech by Mr. J. E. Robinson. Speech by father Joseph Lee Robinson. Organ solo by Miss Mabel Walker. Comic song by Mr. Hyrum Rice. Comic recitation by Mr. E. Wilcox. Sentimental verses composed for the occasion, toasts, dancing. 63 persons present. We will here insert the verses.

We have met here to greet dearest Grandpa  
To cheer him and make his heart glad  
Seventy-seven long years he has tarried  
We never knew his heart to be sad.  
Oh the wealth of a heart that's contented  
A treasure more precious than gold  
To the riches of heaven  
To the blessing and Christ's happy fold  
To Grandpa this chorus we sing.  
Sweet songs, precious songs of the heart  
His precepts we honor and cherish  
From truth we will never depart.  
The winter of life is approaching  
But still not a cloud on his brow  
Just calm and serene as a summer  
Or in springtime when gliding the plow.  
When the great book of records are opened  
And his deeds the kind Savior will scan

There will be to his credit recorded  
Title clear of a good honest man.

*Chorus*

In the midst of his wives & his children  
A patriarch honored he stands  
Respected, beloved, and cherished  
Choice blessings they claim at his hands.  
There will be stars in his bright crown of glory  
That he'll wear on eternity's shore  
Oh then what a joyful reunion  
When all meet to part never more.

Composed by Lucy A. Clark by request of granddaughter,  
Maggie Wilcox

Farmington, February 18th, 1888. These verses were composed for Brother Joseph Lee Robinson on his 77th birthday. Verily, every part was performed well. We had a beautiful dance in our hall all evening.

February 20th. We came home to Hooper. Sister and Brother Ausker [Oscar] Rice and his family came with us on a visit, he to help me some to get out manure. He is an extra good man. He helped me very much as I had a large amount of manure to get out. It had accumulated very much in two years that I had rented the farm and my income was small also.

I now purpose to till the farm and put out the manure to see whether I can make it produce. Consequently I am laboring exceedingly hard. There are many things transpiring these days which is of great interest to Latter-day Saints. The Lord is chastening his Saints, the destroyer is taking away many of our children which causes many parents and people to mourn. Also many severe judgements are being poured out upon the inhabitants of the world such as very destructive fires, earthquakes, storms and tempests, whirlwinds, shipwrecks, railroad disasters, hailstorms, famines, and so forth.

[Editor's note: Here Joseph Lee Robinson repeats again his prophecy or predictions that the world will be destroyed unless the people repent.]

March 1st-12th, 1888. We attend fast meeting. It was very well attended. The brethren spoke well. There were several little children blessed and oil consecrated.

I sent one letter to Aunt Mary in the north and received a good letter from her. Amos returned from his visiting with his brothers and sisters and friends. He helped me some,, Amos started for his home in the north. Oscar and family for home. Sent letter to Solomon in Emery County.

May the blessings of God rest on all of our dear sons and daughters. I bless them in the name of the Lord. We are favored with a beautiful rain today. The first for a long, long time. We thank the Lord very much, it will do the land so



much good. (On 12th) Am writing a good letter to Charles E. Robinson in the city of New York. He had written a long letter to me asking me many questions with regard to Mormonism. He is searching for and obtaining a very extensive genealogy of the Robinsons, our progenitors and kindred. He will publish a book. He will give me one.

My son Jedediah [Jeddediar] came today to help me put in my crops this spring. He takes hold good even with a will. God bless him and his little family. We labor with our might. We labor for Zion exclusively in the name of the Lord. We desire nothing, but the kingdom of God and his righteousness. We trust in God, we are friends of God and hope, and mean, ever to be.

We are having very beautiful weather now. But in the eastern states, a dreadful storm, such as one as they have never known before. The chastisements of Almighty God are coming upon them. It may be the prophet Joseph is fighting them for they have spilt his innocent blood and he did threaten them in the name of God.

[Editor's note: Here, J.L.R. repeats what he has written many times before, his predictions of the last days, of the destruction which will come upon the wicked.]

March 13th. We commence putting in our wheat. I receive a very lengthy and very choice letter from my beloved ones

in the north. They are all well. Have had a very severe winter in that country.

Emera Sales and Ephraim Garner have buried each of them a son.

March 20th. I engage a good boy by the name of David Fowls for the summer and fall. On the 27th we attend a funeral for George (Amis) little boy. He was a fine and noble child. Brother Johnson and I preached the funeral sermons. We told the Saints that the child should return to earth and receive its body again and that his mother, if worthy, should receive it into her arms and should with pleasure nourish and cherish it.

[Editor's note: J.L.R. now repeats what he has said basically before in respect to the resurrection of little children.]

March 31st. Jedediah has gone home. We have performed a large amount of labor. Jedediah came to help me what he could before conference. We are laboring hard, enlarging the beet canal that we may have an abundance of water. We are very hard and faithful laborers but poor scholars.

April 5th. We start to attend conference, the 58th Annual Conference of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, how rich, the title. Took Aunt Rinda, Vee's wife and Jeddy and Rosy and stopped at Farmington.

April 6th. We drive to Salt Lake City. Took Oscar and Willy, his wife with us and stopped with Sister Bridges, George (Arms)

mother. Put my horse in Sister Smith's stable, my wagon in her yard and we attend a live and interesting conference. There was a very large concourse of people attending this 58th Annual conference. We did receive a very large amount of very bold and fearless, good substantial preaching and teaching which caused our minds to expand and our hearts to rejoice exceedingly. It showed us that Mormonism is neither dying nor dead, but that the Latter-day Saints were alive and that they were improving some. We heard a very sound and interesting epistle, good for all the Saints, from President Woodruff. Also, from the Twelve. There are a good many of our elders in exile and many in prison while we have a large army of elders out in and all over and among the nations of the earth promulgating the gospel and the Son of God that if possible we may gather out the elect of God and gather them home to the place of gathering that they might be brought under a rod and into the bowels of the covenant. Yes, that they may become educated in the things of God, yes in the doctrines of Christ that they, with us, may be prepared to receive the Lord when he shall come. (Many other choice instructions were given at this conference.)

April 9th. We drove to Hooper. Found things in very good shape. Find two ewes with six very beautiful, live lambs for which we thank God the great giver of all good. We also find upon our hands an abundance of work, hard work, also health

and strength and a disposition to perform the same for which we thank God. We are enlarging our public large canal, laboring hard with our mights for water.

April 12th. By invitation, my wife Laurinda and I attend a grand party at the house of Eli Mannings, Farmington, my eldest daughters, Anna Maria and second daughter Mary Wilcox, married to Eli Manning's eldest son. They are good children. They had been to Logan Temple and married prior in April, 1888.

We are treated to a splendid supper. We had a good party and by invitation I talked to some length on important subjects.

April 20th. We attend a meeting, the presidency of the stake and President F. D. Richards and Brother Joseph Stanford, our superintendent Rich Balentine and others were in attendance. The ward was reorganized by appointing Warren Childs bishop and Ollie Olsen and Nephi Hardy his counselors. These three brethren were all ordained high priests and also set apart in the bishopric. They are good, interesting, smart young men. They will make a good team. We pray for them that they may take hold with their mights, fill their high and important office with honor.

April 25th. While moving my young horse this morning I became severely injured having my left shoulder put out and my upper arm bruised severely. I acknowledge the hand of the

Lord in this severe hurt, but it probably was my carelessness. I thank the Lord in it and if I thought it was his will that I should suffer thus then I would certainly thank him for it.

This evening, while I was laboring in my field, one of Brother David Bibey's sons came to me and informed me that his brother William had been stabbed in his breast and that he was very bad. They wished me to come and administer to him that he might live and not die. Accordingly I went about eight miles this evening and stayed with him all night. We administered to him in the name of the Lord that evening and the next morning we very earnestly sought the Lord to spare his life that he might live for the Lord's sake and for his own sake and for his wife and children's sake and for his dear father and mother's sake, his brothers and sisters and many friends' sake also that he was stabbed so severely that he bled inwardly. He was appointed unto death or at least we did not exercise faith sufficiently to save him. The next day, April 18th, 1888 in the afternoon he departed this life. He left a wife and three or four little children to mourn his loss and also many friends to weep for the loss of a loving son and an affectionate brother. He was surely a very good, kind, interesting young man. We surely weep and feel sad for him and his family but we would many times rather be in their place than in the place of him that murdered this good man. We do earnestly pray our Father in Heaven in the name of Jesus,

to bless and comfort the widow and fatherless children and many relatives.

May 1888. I received a letter from Mr. Tullege asking for historic information as he is about to publish the history of Utah. We tried to give him some of the desired information. We hope he received it in time.

My son Jedediah is helping me very much. He is a famous worker and a good boy.

This morning, very early, I awoke my son Jedediah asking him if he would arise and anoint and bless my shoulder for I was and had been suffering for several hours with a dreadful, cutting pain in my shoulder and that it was dreadful in the extreme. Now I did think, surely, the hand of the Lord is in this severe hurt, in the way it was brought about and that it became me to bear it with all the patience and fortitude that I possibly could. But, this present pain was more than I was required or more than I need to bear. So, in my heart, I prayed earnestly that this present pain might be rebuked and taken entirely away. Surely it was done, for my son commenced with pain killer rubbing it with the same for some time. But, that did no good, not one particle. This dreadful pain continued. Then he took the consecrated oil and anointed it in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. As he commenced to anoint, the dreadful commenced to leave my shoulder. When he got through administering the pain was certainly all gone.

So, I did verily know it was the Lord and how thankful I was and certainly should be unto the Lord, my God, even unto my Redeemer, even for this wonderful manifestation of his power. I do know that my Redeemer liveth and because he lives, I live also, and we do certify now that that very severe and very extraordinary pain did certainly leave and it never came back, thank the Lord, although my shoulder is very weak and gets very tired and painful but that kind of pain never did return.

May 8th. Elder F. S. Johnson came and examined my shoulder and he pronounced my shoulder in place all right. By request, he anointed my head and shoulder in the name of the Lord and administered to me. He rebuked the pain and soreness from the foundation. Suffice to say, I feel much better and expect to get well and sound again, if the Lord will, we expect he will, we trust in him.

### *January 1st, 1889*

[Editor's note: The J.L.R. journal now skips to January 1st, 1889. It is obvious that there is no material in between these dates because the journal continues on the back of the page from which we have just been dictating.]

January 1st, 1889. This day we took dinner with Jedediah and family in Farmington with several of our children. Had a good dinner, we enjoyed ourselves very much. Our daughter,

Laury, prepared our dinner but the next day I was quite sick. However, I read 150 pages in the life of apostle Heber C. Kimball which was very interesting which related the very interesting account of the dedication of the Kirtland Temple and of his appointment and call to a mission in old England. This was the first Mormon missionary work done in foreign land. The book told of his success, the wonderful power of God manifested there and also the power of the devil in opposition to the gospel of the Son of God who attacked the elders and nearly killed some of them. The account told of his wonderful success, the great numbers that were baptized there and of his return and travels to Missouri and the dreadful persecutions the Saints received there, while some were killed and some were imprisoned and the whole Church was driven from the state of Missouri.

I also fasted that day and visited some and got much better through the mercy of God. The next day I traveled to Hooper, found all well, Aunt Laurinda stayed in Farmington to nurse and comfort a sick daughter. The weather very cold these days.

January 5th, 1889. Saturday, this morning before I arose from my bed my mind became lit up by the power of the Holy Ghost and I received a solution and explanation of several very important subjects. In my weakness, I may attempt to explain or I'll reveal some of them and these are subjects I



never had explained to me before but had heard many opinions but they greatly differed as they always will without revelation to establish the facts.

One was, the Lord gives a man a wife in the new and everlasting covenant. She is sealed to him for time and all eternity and by any means she may wish or thinks she does want to go to some other man to become his. If the man that she thought she desired was in a lower state or could not exalt her any higher or not so high, as her husband. In that case he should not let her go. But in a case a woman gets sealed to a man that cannot exalt her as high as she is worthy to receive, because she may be one that is very intelligent and has never committed adultery or any other capital crime in either of her probations so that there never was a stain upon her character and she has earned a very bright crown and that she is worthy to go up higher than her man can take her. She can claim the privilege of the hand of her Father in Heaven. He certainly will not deny her and in that case her husband cannot hold her back.

Never until such times that we have temples built with an apartment in the same where the true character of every person can and will be brought to life, their truth and worthiness, as it is before God, can and shall be revealed and the fullness of the law revealed and after this, if a woman knowing the true worth of the man and she is willing and

wishes to be sealed to that man, then she will be informed that she can never leave him. Now verily, until such times as the fullness of the law is revealed, in all cases, the daughters of Zion, cannot be compelled to remain with a man that she might happen to get sealed to because she can't have but one man, therefore it would not be just and equitable and strictly just before the Lord, as our God is just, he therefore cannot do wrong, his precious beloved daughters, for he loves them. I do love them also, even all those who are virtuous and true, thank God.

It is very cold weather, some slow sleighing. I visited my beloved daughter Oaney and her family. Stayed over night with them. Had a very interesting chat with her husband Byran Bibe and he gave me two sacks of corn and one of apples for which I thanked him very much and upon my way home I took dinner with my son William and family. Consecrated a bottle of oil and blessed a sick child. I feel like David said, I give thanks unto the Lord for his very rich mercy.

I drove to Farmington and visited with several of my children and had a regular good time with them. Blessed two of my daughters that were sick, namely Ester and Sarah. I also gave to four of my granddaughters a good patriarchal blessing, namely Lucy, Mary, and Rosy Robinson and Anabel Rose. They are good, nice daughters of Zion. God bless them.

February 1st. Left Aunt Rinda, still with her daughter and brought up Sister Elizabeth, Oscar's good mother, as my son-in-law Oscar Rice and his family is living in one of my rooms this winter. He is helping me, feeding our stock, Having a good winter.

February 3rd. The Sabbath, I attended meeting and after meeting had a good talk with Brother John Manning, a returned missionary and gave two of their children a good patriarchal blessing. I also read the magazine sent to me by C. E. Robinson.

[Editor's note: J.L.R.'s journal now skips to 1889.]

Many things have transpired of vital importance during the last few months and also many very remarkably wicked, hard sickening and ungodly murders and suicides, robbings and sudden deaths and a great loss of life and many, very many have gone to a watery grave. Surely, it is evident God is angry with the wicked and not many years hence great and mighty cities shall be destroyed and sink with the inhabitants thereof, shall be burned with fire from heaven and that is not all but there shall be dreadful wars and bloodshed which shall make the hardest heart of wicked man to ache.

[Editor's note: J.L.R. inserts this 1888 material here.]

November 4, 1888. My eldest son Oliver's seventh son, Eugene, died, leaving a wife and three small children to mourn his death and to be cared for. We mourn with them, but not

without hope for he was a good man and has surely gone to rest for a while, but his work will follow him and he shall perform a good missionary work in the spirit world and in the near future shall receive a glorious resurrection and strike hands with his family and friends and live forever.

At his funeral in the Farmington meetinghouse, which took place November 6, 1888, I was called upon to address the large assembly that was assembled upon that solemn occasion. (Eugene was born August 11, 1862.)

In our remarks, we testified that this our beloved brother lying before us, was a Saint and that he had died in the Lord and that he was blessed that he had earned a glorious resurrection and that he should receive that same body again and that it should look just like it did when he died and that he should be healed, become healthy, and live forever. All that the Holy Ghost has promised him should be given him and his work should follow him and he should enter directly into the work of the ministry in the spirit world. That he would most certainly perform a large missionary work there, as there was a thousand times more people to preach to there than there are here on this earth at the present time. Our elders holding the holy priesthood, they would have that work to perform in the spirit world the same as they have to preach it, the gospel, here upon this earth.

[Editor's note: J.L.R. then continues to outline the things that would transpire before the second coming of our Lord, Jesus Christ. He concluded the recording of his address by assuring the congregation that Eugene would be reunited with his father, Oliver L. Robinson, and that they never would be separated again. Also, he concluded by asserting that there never would be a better man than he (Eugene) was.]

This morning, before I arose from my bed, in my serious and deep reflection, the veil seemed to be drawn and the Comforter kindly introduced several very important matters and subjects giving me an understanding and knowledge upon those matters, clearing up several to my understanding and leading me into other very great and important matters. Truly, the Lord is very gracious and extremely good unto his covenant people, as the Savior said to his disciples, that he would send the Comforter and he, the Comforter, should lead them into all truth.

Now, we wish to be understood, that any person that exercises true and genuine faith in Jesus Christ and renders obedience to the requirements of the gospel, whether this obedience, or baptism, and all other ordinances are performed by him, or her, or whether they are performed by others.

Well, with regard to polygamy, it is in my estimation certainly a very interesting and very important tenet or item of our holy religion, yet not in a general sense essential to

salvation. It is left optional with any and every man to enter into that holy order, or into polygamy, or not, as it may please himself only if he does break the laws of the land he will have to abide the consequences. But, with the hundreds and the tens of thousands and hundreds of thousands of members of this Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, there are comparatively few that have ever entered into polygamist marriages and still those members are held in full fellowship in the Church just the same. But, I probably will say more to you upon this subject at some other time. We do not term this (polygamy) the gospel—no not by any means.

I would like to leave this subject for the present and would like to preach the gospel of life and salvation to you. Well, I think or suppose you will say, we have already got the gospel, have we not? Well, as to that we will have to leave it to the Bible to say and that is what I meant, do you really think that you do believe the Bible or do you believe your own or some other man's interpretation of the Bible. We will now inquire and see what the Holy Bible will say about the subject of the gospel.

[Editor's note: J.L.R. then continues for several pages preaching the gospel to Mr. C. E. Robinson—the gospel as contained in the Bible. J.L.R. ends his letter to Mr. Charles E. Robinson in New York with "I remain your very obedient and sincere well wisher", Joseph L. Robinson, Hooper, Utah.]

April 6th, 1889. We attended our general conference, held in the large tabernacle in Salt Lake City. Many thousands of people attended this conference and it was a very excellent, good meeting. Much very rich instruction was imparted to the Saints. We enjoyed this meeting extremely well. We feel ourselves highly favored of the Lord, for he has given unto us a First Presidency, again. We voted for our beloved brethren, Wilford Woodruff, for our president and George Q. Cannon, our first and Joseph F. Smith, our second counselors. The vote was a hearty unanimous one. We thank our God very much for so good men, for presidents and that he, the Lord, is with this people and that he is so wonderfully blessing this dear people and that he has lead them into so goodly a land, out of bondage and that he has placed a hedge about them to protect them.

June 20th. Our Hooper Ward has built a very large and nice bowery and several Sunday Schools met in the same on this day. There were speeches from different individuals, the recitals of choice scriptures, the singing and beautiful music from the band, a sweet and good spirit through the exercises altogether which made it one of the most interesting exercises we have ever attended. It manifested to us that our Sunday Schools are doing a vast amount of good.

June 26th. We attended the old folks celebration in Ogden. It was a decided success, a beautiful day, a very large gathering

and abundance of good dinner. Many very nice, good presents to the old and poor, good speeches and a very interesting, general good time, all seemed to feel well.

August 4th, Sunday. Our new and very fine meetinghouse was dedicated today. The Hooper Ward has reason to feel proud and thank their God for their splendid meetinghouse. It would be a credit to any ward in Zion. President Shirlif and his counselors, several of the twelve and others were there. It was a very rich meeting. The President and all hands did talk so very well. Apostle Franklin F. Richards made the dedicatory prayer. It was truly a feast, we were so very happy, the Lord was there.

August 12th. My William came to me very sick. I anointed and blessed him in the name of the Lord. He was healed immediately and returned to his work, praising God, his good Lord for his goodness and his matchless love and power. Surely our God is with us. We shall never be moved.

Now verily, this present season has been the driest season we have ever experienced in these valleys. Our potato crops have almost proved a failure. Our corn and cane and other kinds, about the same. Many fruit and shade trees have died with thirst, but I truly felt it was a marvel that my Lucerne hay did yield so very much. I do thank my God very exceedingly. It surely is his holy hand.



August 18th, Sunday. I was watering my vines this morning by pouring water on the hills but this evening a soaking rain, a wonderful heavy shower.

May 5th, 1889. As I have been writing a good letter to my nephew, Milton Robinson, a resident of the state of Pennsylvania. He is a very candid, interesting young man as he has undertaken the task and is getting up the Robinson family records. He has written to me several good letters and has requested me to write him a good Christian letter, I have written one and will copy the same, hoping it will benefit some others as well as himself.

*Hooper City, May 5th, 1889, Weber County, Utah.*

*Mr. Milton Robinson, my very dear nephew.*

*I have many times thought of you and had wished I had time to write a good, long letter to you, but I am very busy, as I am alone on my farm, but do not intend to have it so always.*

*I am in very good health and in good spirits through the mercy of God and feel very happy in my very much despised religion. I have certainly taken, joyfully taken, the spoiling of my goods, and I have been driven once from Nauvoo, State of Illinois, with the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints and they, the Church, has been driven four times from their homes and hard earned possessions. Still this people is becoming a great people, numerous and many very wealthy, but I am*

*not rich in the world's goods but have a plenty to make us comfortable, for which I feel very thankful to the great giver of all good.*

*But, if faith in God and in his gospel and also in good works and in a large, good family, are riches, then I am rich. That is, I feel to say I am very thankful to Almighty God, my Heavenly Father for what I do possess in that line and feel that these things are worth more to me than a large amount of gold and silver, houses and lands, flocks and herds in great abundance.*

*Well, my boy, I acknowledge the receipt of a very good, kind letter written by your hand to me. And since you have invited me to write you a good, kind Christian letter, something like I had written to you before and as you seem to be a candid, sensible young man, a man of good habits, interesting and enterprising, just the kind of a man that is worth saving and that would be worth being saved of the gospel of the son of God and become instrumental in saving others. Also, as a large mission is on hand which will require smart and willing young men to perform a preaching mission for dispensation of the gospel has been committed to man and it has been preached to many people, to many nations for the last 50 years or more and very many people have received it. Yet, this missionary work has but just commenced. But as the Lord liveth, that everlasting gospel that John the Revelator saw, the holy angel*

*flying through the midst of heaven having the everlasting gospel to preach to men that dwell on the earth, which he did commit to man to preach to every nation, kingdom, tongue and people that dwell on the earth. As Jesus said, that when this gospel of the kingdom should be preached to every nation then should the end come. But our sectarian Christian friends will say that the everlasting gospel was preached by Christ and his apostles and that in their day it was preached and that there is never to be any more dispensations of the gospel of the son of God on this earth. They say that there shall never be any more apostles and prophets, gifts of healing by the laying on of hands and anointing with oil in the name of the Lord, etc.*

[Editor's note: J.L.R. continues in this letter to outline the restoration of the gospel and renders his testimony to this young nephew. He continues for several pages in his journal quoting the scriptures to this young man. Then on November 17th writes another letter to his beloved nephew Milton Robinson in response to a letter which he had received from him. He ends his letters-with renderings of his strong, powerful testimony of the gospel and continues as follows.]

*Well now I want to say that I did not think of writing very much on religious matters, but have written some this time, but have still said but little. If you do not want to hear any more,*

*you must not invite me to write you a good religious letter any more. I beg your pardon, you must not be offended.*

*I will now say I have just received a very kind, good letter from you. My very best wishes and I am much pleased to hear that you were well and that you were still engaged in the good work, in looking after and tracing out the records of the Robinson family. I do really hope and pray that you may in some way trace out the line and lineage of our forefathers way back for a long ways. I do not doubt but that Charles E. Robinson has gone into them and that he and us are connected. But, I suppose that is not ascertained for certainty. Yet, he has taken up the offer that I gave to you, to ask questions and I would answer them and I have written a considerable to him. He is a gentleman, a very good man, I am highly pleased with him and his letters. I find no fault with them. I should like very much to see him as well also yourself and have a good long and sound talk with you both as I do entertain the best feelings for both of you. God bless you.)*

*September 28th. It is, or has been Thanksgiving Day. My wife got us up a royal dinner. We have had a good time and some of our friends with us to partake with us.*

[Editor's note: This, apparently, is another letter addressed to Milton Robinson.]

*I wish, yourself, could have been one of them, one of our guests. I should like to see you very much but would more like to have you receive the gospel and become a member of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. But then, you would be called a poor, diluted Mormon and you should be belied and persecuted and would be cast out as evil. And how would you like that, my dear boy. Well the Lord bless you with a pure heart and clean hands and good luck is my humble prayer and blessing. Yours truly, with kind love and charity to my beloved nephew Milton Robinson signed Joseph L. Robinson.*

August 22nd, 1889. Thursday morning we were called to administer to Bishop Williams Childs, our bishop, he was a very sick man. We united and prayed for him and administered to him. I was mouth. We promised him he should live. I felt very much interested for him and through the day I retired to secret places and knelt down and prayed very earnestly to the Lord that he would look in mercy upon him and spare his life. That for his name's sake and for his and the ward's sake that he might be healed as he was a very good man, a very enterprising, industrious, useful man and we did not know how we could spare him.

We were all called together again in the evening and on my way there I did pray earnestly to the Father, in the name

of Jesus, that he would spare our bishop, that he would not take him from us, not at this time. And I did also tease the Lord, my God, that he would graciously give unto us something through the gift of the Holy Ghost with regard to that man.

There were some eight or ten elders together. We formed a circle and Bishop Belnap was mouth in prayer. Elder Case was mouth, I anointed him and gave him oil inwardly. After the administration, a very few minutes, and the spirit of the Lord came widely upon me and filled my soul with great joy even to the shedding of many tears and the Holy Ghost did say unto me in plain words, the prayers of the brethren have gone up into the ears of the Lord of the Sabbath. The heavens have decided they shall be granted. Your bishop shall remain with you for a season. He shall not be taken at this time.

These precious words to me were very consoling. I felt to praise and magnify the name of the Lord for he had heard and answered our prayers and that we did possess some of the faith of Abraham and that Abraham's God was our friend and that our bishop should remain.

Presently, Elder F. S. Johnson came in, he was late, but he wished to do something for him. He requested and we formed a circle and in order we prayed. Elder Case was the mouth at this time. Elder Johnson anointed him and by request I blessed him and told him his prayers were heard and his brethren's also in his behalf and they should be answered. For thus saith

the Holy Ghost, that he, our Bishop Childs should live and remain with us for awhile. So, in accordance to the word of the Lord, we knew that our bishop would certainly get well. But it was said by some that most of the brethren thought he would die but I did know that his word could not fail for we have always proved him in every word that he saith for he cannot lie, he will not leave us and we trust in him.

[Editor's note: Although J.L.R, does not so record, apparently Bishop Childs did get better.]

August 25th, Sunday. I drove to Brother Ausmaus. He is very low, he will soon pass away. Several of the brethren met and we prayed for him. We hoped he would get easier. I went and blessed Brother Ausmaus today that he might depart in peace inasmuch as it was not the will of the Lord that he should remain with us as he has suffered long and much. It has been several months since I took paper and a good man with me and went to his house and I did in the name of the Lord give unto him a good patriarchal blessing and he received the promise of many good things and this good brother wrote it and we left the copy with him. He had been sick for a long time, we hoped he would have faith to be healed and remain with us and with his dear, nice family, but no, our beloved Brother Ausmaus passed away easy today, gone to sleep. Died today, August 30th. Sleep on dear brother and take your rest and let your industrious spirit labor with the blessed.

September 1st, 1889. Sunday, 4 o'clock p.m. at the meetinghouse, Hooper, funeral services were held over the remains of Brother George Ausman and being called upon I preached the funeral sermon. We addressed the people and friends of Brother George Ausman in the fear and in the name of the Lord. We said he is a good man and that he had died in the Lord, or more proper that he slept in Jesus and that God, for Christ's sake, had forgiven him all his sins and that he had a great work to perform in the spirit world and that he had suffered very much in this world and that he should be rewarded for all his suffering and that he should perform a very meritorious work in the spirit world and that his work should go on here and that he should lose nothing but should receive all that the holy patriarch had promised him in the name of the Lord. He should not remain very long in the grave, that when the trump should sound for him he would awake and he should look just as he did when he went to sleep but that he should be healed and become a sound man, a healthy and holy man of God and that he should carry on his own work and that he should receive all that had been promised him, not one word, jot or tittle should fail and that he should live forever with the Lord. We labored to comfort the mourners of our dear brother and friend. We said many things for the living and pertaining to the dead.



September 8th. Jeddy and his mother went to Farmington, attended a wonderful good two day's meeting there. Presidents Woodruff and Cannon did most of the preaching. They were full of the Holy Ghost so surely the Lord is with this people. My son William came for me. They were all sick.

I went with him to Brother Baker's and consecrated some oil and we administered to his wife and child and also to Brother Baker and child and they all did get better.

September 12th. We met and united in prayer for and administered to our bishop, William Childs. He is very sick again but he will certainly get well. We remember the promise the Lord made to us for him.

September 14th. We thrash our grain. We have about 150 bushels of wheat. There are many very sick, the most of them recover but some die. Brother William Garner has buried two of their little flock, two little sons. He himself and the only two sons left were very sick. We blessed them, they will live and get well and so they did.

September 29. My wife and I drove up to see our daughter Oanie and family and we attended one of the most interesting and sweetest little meetings, a conference at Uintah that we ever attended. The presidency of the stake and several of the brethren were there and they did talk so very good. Brother Joseph Stanford talked so very sweet, we felt to bless them all in the name of the Lord.

As their bishop had died they organized the ward by appointing a president and several officers and blessed the people.

We had a good visit also with our children and my son-in-law Byron. They gave to me a good pair of new shoes and they gave me a large nice book, entitled "A Beautiful Story". Only, when we had done with it that it, the book, should fall back to their own children. Our son-in-law Oscar Rice and his wife, Welle [or Wette] from the poor-house (?). Brother John Wadsworth is driving a flowing well for us in Hooper.

October 6th. We attended the 59th Semi-Annual Conference of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. Our President, Elder Woodruff and his first counselor and six of the Twelve and a host of elders were in attendance. It was the largest and we think as good and as interesting a conference as we ever had. The spirit of the Lord did richly attend the many very rich instructive and very interesting discourses that were delivered at this conference. They were well calculated to encourage and strengthen and bless the Latter-day Saints. God is with the Saints, therefore they cannot be moved out of their place never unless they do worse so that the Lord has to leave them. Wo unto them that fight against Zion.

November 10th and 11th. Our new meeting-house in Hooper was christened with a very interesting conference. The presidency of the Weber Stake of Zion with several of the High

Council and elders from Ogden were in attendance. The brethren were in good spirits. A considerable amount of business was transacted and the presidency and brethren talked so very extremely well and good to the Saints in Hooper. We had a regular feast. We are blessed with a very fine and comodious meetinghouse to worship God in for which blessing we feel very thankful to Almighty God, our Heavenly Father, and also to all the good people of Hooper who have so cheerfully and faithfully contributed of their means and labor to build the same. We are laboring hard, putting in some wheat, the rains are falling copiously.

November 18th. Our beloved son, Lee Sidwells, came in from the north. We were much pleased to see him looking and feeling so well. He is a very nice lad.

December 23rd. The prophet Joseph Smith's birthday. We were invited to celebrate this day by our presidency. To fast all day and meet together and pray to Almighty God, our Heavenly Father, that he would graciously look in mercy upon his beloved people, the Latter-day Saints. That he would soften the hearts of our enemies toward them. That the Saints may not be brought into bondage and be destroyed, but that they may live and prevail against all their enemies.

Behold, the Saints with all their children did fast and meet together in all the valleys in the mountains and behold, shall not the heavens be moved? Yes, verily they most certainly will

be for the good of the poor (yet rich) persecuted, Latter-day Saints. Our God shall soon come out of his hiding place and he shall vex this ungodly nation with a very sore vexation.

December 24th. Wrote one letter to my family in the north. Administered to Sister Elgren. We promised her she should recover. Took some meat for Christmas and charity to a widow.

December 25th. Held our Christmas with our own beloved daughter Janie Bybe and family. We had an excellent good time with them.

December 29th, 1889. Sunday, we attended the funeral of our grandson Joel Rose. We had received the intelligence that he had passed away. He had died and gone to rest.

While viewing the corpse I saw in his countenance the spirit of the great rest, felt a solemn holy influence. It struck me like a flash of lightning. I had such feelings as never had before while viewing a corpse. I had to turn away and weep like a whipped child, the tears ran like a flood and that was something that I never had done before, never to my remembrance did I weep while viewing a dead person. He seemed to me a very superior, majestic spirit, not by no means a common person. I was struck with wonder and amazement. My reflections were, this child, okay my God, what about this child. He was the first bom of our daughter Josephine who is probably as good a woman as they make, a Saint, a pure

daughter of Zion. He was a remarkable, intelligent child of a very serious religious turn. At about 2 years of age he was stricken down and after he was stricken he never walked one step or spoke one word. He lived the past 21 years, he was born (1868) and he died December 29, 1889.

He had never sinned against his God or any person living. It is very probable that another such an instance had never been since Adam's day, except Jesus, our Savior. He never sinned, but every man is counted a sinner but him. And if Jesus had committed one sin, then surely he could not have atoned for one man, let alone his blood to atone for the sins of the whole world.

Brother James Smith and counselors Jonathan Wood spoke and Bishop Seacrist also. They spoke so very good, interesting and comforting upon that occasion. I was called on and I made a few remarks, something of my feelings of the remarkable-ness of this child before us, for we had administered to him many times and by the Holy Ghost had promised him he should be healed. Many blessings we had pronounced upon his head, all which we knew must and should be fulfilled because there was no act or sin on his part to prevent those blessings. The Holy Ghost has promised him and we did say so that he was as innocent as a new born babe and that he should be blessed with them and when the trump should sound for that class of dead to awake, that is innocent children, that he should

wake up and that he should come forth and that he should look just like he did.

Now as he lies there and he should be healed just as it had been promised him, that he should become a sound, healthy, intelligent and holy man of God and that he should forever remain so, and that there should be no power that should hinder him from doing the will of the Father. This was the most solemn funeral that I ever attended.

After this meeting, the funeral was held at Brother Rose's house, we attended a meeting in the meetinghouse and surely there was such a good spirit. It seemed that I never heard men talk so good before.

[Editor's note: Here, again, J.L.R. repeats the promises of the resurrection.]

### *January 1890*

January 1890. We returned to Hooper, found our people well but several brothers and sisters were sick. We went out and administered to Sister Johnson. She got immediately better. Also to Brother Oliver Manning and he got better, also to a sick child and it got better.

January 19th. The snow was very deep. We attend conference in Ogden, a very good meeting. William Blanthem, a very good, nice young man came to live with me, to help

me as I have 40 or 50 head of stock to feed this winter and it may be he will stay with me. We have an abundance of work to do.

January 28th. I took a load of hay to Jeddy in Farmington. Blessed my grandson Joseph E, Robinson, Jr., gave him a patriarchal blessing. I went to patriarch John Tibits. He is very "feeble, he has suffered very much, he wished me to bless him and I did so with pleasure. He feels that his work is done here. He feels very anxious to go if it can be the will of the Lord. I said to him what kind of a message would you take to our brethren up there. He said he would not take a bad message and it came pass the Lord, by my hand, and through my mouth, gave unto him such a blessing as I never gave to a live man before. We told him that when the day and the hour came for him to go, that he should go in peace and that he should have 'a pleasant look and a smile upon his countenance that would prove to all that saw him that he was happy and that also a holy escort should be prepared and that he should receive a welcome, well done good and faithful servant, enter thou into the joy of thy Lord, for when I was in hungered, ye fed me, when athirst ye gave me drink and naked, ye clothed me.

[Editor's note: J.L.R. continues with the promises of a joyful resurrection.]

Brother Tibits said he wanted to say something for Brother Robinson before he left. He was very weak, he was trying to get strength to speak. I stood by his side, my right hand upon his head and secretly prayed to the Father to give unto him strength to speak and that the Holy Ghost should speak to him what he wished to say to me. His wife was at his feet waiting to catch every word he might say.

I could see his lips move, his wife said she understood every word. He said he felt very thankful for the great blessing he had received and that Brother Robinson was a great and good man and that he was a patriarch of the highest order and that he should hold that position and priesthood through time and all eternity. I said, all right, that is true, but surely it was more than I expected. I did thank my Father and God exceedingly. I felt so happy, such a holy solemnity prevailed my soul and my bosom, a feeling I cannot describe. I delivered to him the message to take to the spirit world and blessed him and bade him farewell and tears ran from my eyes like raindrops. I left him.

I visited some with my son Joseph E. and transacted some business with him.

January 29th. This evening the Farmington choir met at his house as a surprise party. He was the leader of the choir. They made him some birthday presents, a large fine rocking chair. My wife came up from the city this day and we joined



them in this surprise party. We enjoyed ourselves remarkably well. We partook of a very rich picnic supper with them, we were very happy indeed.

February 2nd. It is Joseph Elijah Robinson's birthday, born February 2, 1849.

I received a letter from a nephew, a 15 year old boy. I think I will copy the same and also the answer to the same.

*Chagrin Falls, Ohio, January 28, 1890.*

*Mr. Joseph L. Robinson, Dear Sir:*

*I am a boy, 15 years old, and am the son of your brother Samuel's daughter Carria. I go to school in the grammar department in the Chagrin schools. I have been reading a book on the Mormon question and am very much interested in the same and I thought I would write to you, thinking that you would kindly answer all questions regarding them.*

*I think they have stood a good many trials and persecutions. After reading that book I learned how they had been driven from one place to another and finally to Utah. What kind of soil is that of Utah and also what is raised there? I heard a letter read that you wrote to Charles E. Robinson in New York at the Robinson family reunion. I remember that I was interested in it at the time, but so much so as I would be if I were to hear it now. I wish you could come out here for the family reunion*

*next August as it is to be held at our house, and would be very much pleased to have you come. We would warrant you a good time as we do always have good times. I also wish the Robinson family would hire a special car and go to Utah and hold the reunion out there. Wouldn't it be a great trip for us and just to think of the beautiful scenery we would all have a chance to see. But I suppose that never will happen.*

*I suppose you would like to know how I got your address. I got it from Milton Robinson who lived in Pennsylvania. Now, I am afraid I am asking most too much when I ask you to give me a full account of the Mormons, but if I am, I trust you will forgive me as I do not know how long the history will be. Hoping to hear from you soon, I am yours truly. I also want to ask you if the Mormon question is growing or decreasing and about how many Mormons there are in Utah. That is, if you know very accurately. Yours truly, (signed Glné Eliss [must be Glenn Ellis]).*

As I have written a good letter to my young nephew in Ohio, I will copy the same, hoping it may do some good.

*Hooper City, Weber County, Utah, March 26th, 1890.*

*To my dear young nephew, very good sir:*

*I acknowledge the receipt of a very kind and inquiring letter written by your hand which came some time ago. I should*

*have answered it long before this but being very busy have neglected it until the present time. You asked me several questions and I would be very much pleased to answer them all but shall not be able to at this time.*

*I am a member of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints (we are vulgarly called Mormons).*

*I was baptized into this church in August, 1836. Consequently, I am something of an old member, as this church was organized, April 6, 1830, but with only six members in it. Now it numbers some two or three hundred thousand and is rapidly increasing in numbers, notwithstanding the severe trials they have passed through. They are despised and ridiculed. They are belied and slandered. A great many wicked, disgraceful reports are and have been circulated against our people. Many have been murdered outright and they have been driven from place to place, even four times as this church has been driven four times from their homes until they are found here in these valleys of the Rocky Mountains.*

*You ask about the soil and about our country generally. The soil is black loam, dark sandy, light sandy, different kinds of clay, in some places a red soil. The land generally is very productive, but it has to be watered. It will produce all kinds of grain and vegetables and the choicest fruit of almost all kinds. The land is generally highly cultivated from small to*

*large beautiful farms and it is very fine stock country also. (It raises) horses, horned stock, and sheep are raised in these valleys by the hundreds of thousands. There are a great many large and beautiful cities besides many small cities and villages. Our settlements extend several hundred miles north and south and there are a great many valleys which are very thickly settled. The capitol of Utah is Salt Lake City. We have several beautiful temples built here and many very elegant tabernacles and meeting houses to worship God in. and a large number of academies and school houses.*

*You will want to know why it is that our people are so much persecuted and why it is that they are so much despised and so unpopular. Is it because they are so corrupt, or disloyal, or dishonest, or irreligious? No, it certainly is not, for our people are a very religious, devoted, humble, praying people. They do believe the Bible and they do believe the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, the same kind of gospel that our Saviour and his apostles did preach and which he commanded them to preach to all the world and to every creature, saying that he that believes and is baptized shall be saved and that he that believes not, shall be damned.*

[Editor's note: J.L.R. continues quoting the scriptures and outlining in detail the beliefs and teachings of the church recorded on his pages numbered 116 and 117. J.L.R. concludes the letter by telling this young man that it would be necessary to write an entire book to tell the

whole story. He invites him to come to Utah and stay with him as his guest, then writes -]

*Now, I hope this small letter will find yourself and your father's family well as it leaves me. Your grandfather, how is he? You must tell him that I, his younger brother, would like wonderfully well to see him once more in this world and have a good long talk with him and his good wife. You must tell them when you see them that brother Joseph is yet alive and well and hearty and that he is a hard laboring man and that he was born on the 18th day of February 1811.*

*Well, now, my dear boy, we have several, I don't know how many, very nice academies in good running order in Utah, with good first class teachers with the rudiments of common learning, bookkeeping and everything necessary to prepare young men and women for teachers. Also, theology and all the rudiments and principles of Mormonism or of the gospel of Jesus Christ are thoroughly taught in them. Now if you could only come here and attend one of these schools for a year or two it might be the best thing that ever happened to you. If you can get the consent of your parents and can get a little means, and feel like it to come ahead and I will do you all the good that I can. You have undoubtedly heard that your Uncle Joseph was and had been a polygamist. I have had and raised several families which all put together*

*won't make more than one large family. Yes, several of them so that I have never become very rich. I am and also have been a very hard worker and industrious and what is called a good and very honest man. My chances for learning have been very limited indeed but I have always tried to give my children as good a chance for learning as I possibly could and if I can be allowed to say it, I think I can say it in truth that all my children are reasonably bright, intelligent, well- inclined, respectable, moral and religious and what we call worshippers of the true and living God.*

*Now my dear boy, I will if you will allow me to ask, are you a praying child? If so I will say all right for it should be so. We certainly should all of us be found calling upon the name of the Lord even upon God that gave unto us a being and that doth feed and clothe us and that doth give unto us so very many rich blessings here on this earth. All our lives are in his hands and he has made unto us many rich and precious promises that inasmuch as we will repent of all our sins and call upon his high and holy name, in faith believing, nothing doubting, asking for the things that we do really need, he says we shall receive the things that we ask for.*

*Now our Mormon elders would say unto you, believe in the Lord Jesus Christ who did come into the world in the flesh and did perform many mighty works such as none but a*

*God could do. He taught as a man having authority, doctrine and principles such as no other many ever did teach on this earth*

[Editor's note: J.L.R. then bears to this young man a most powerful testimony of the truthfulness of the gospel of Jesus Christ and of its restoration.]

*Well, this is a little of Mormon preaching but only just a little. Now, with regard to the Robinson family reunions, I am well pleased that they are held somewhere and I presume that I should be a great deal better pleased could I, myself, attend them. But, I am so far away and time and money so scarce with me that I do not know when or whether I shall be able to attend.*

*Now, I would like to hear from you soon and if I have your right address and if you wish to hear anything more on the Mormon question. If so, ask and you shall receive, seek and you shall find, knock and it shall be opened unto you.*

*The Lord bless you my very dear young friend and brother. With kind regards I remain yours very affectionately, Joseph L. Robinson.*

*To Glenn Ellis. Write sooner than I have done and I will try to be more prompt. J.L.R.*

February 12th. We attend the funeral of Brother Flowers [Towers?]. Several spoke of him and of his virtues and zeal

and faith and energy in the cause of his Redeemer. We knew him for years as an honorable man, a faithful saint.

The funeral was well and largely attended. The people showed to him a great respect. There were 50 carriages. The bishop requested me to dedicate Brother Flowers' grave and we did dedicate him to God.

February 18th. My 79th birthday. Some of my children with us. We have an excellent good dinner. My son-in-law presented me with a warm pair of boots and overshoes and my daughter Laurinda E. Parker with a nice pair of slippers. The spirit of the Lord rested upon me. My mind reverted back 79 years. I said, bless my mother that bore me and gave me suck and my father that begat me. They were honorable, good people and the blessings of God shall rest upon both of them and they shall rejoice in the kingdom of God.

April 6th. My son Willie and the folks have gone to conference. Jeddy gone home and I left alone to feed all the stock, milk the cows and do all the work alone. Verily I felt very solemn and humble before the Lord, thinking it probably is our Saviour's birthday. I felt it would be wisdom for me to fast and surely I did fast all day, feeling sorry that I could not attend the 60th conference of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. I bowed down before my maker and did offer up exceeding humble, earnest and solemn prayer to Almighty God, my Heavenly Father. An unusual spirit of prayer rested



down upon me and I prayed earnestly for the conference that the Holy Ghost might preside through the entire session and that all necessary business might be attended to in the name and the fear of God.

I also prayed that the Saints might be inspired and permitted to continue building holy temples in these valleys in the mountains of Ephraim, and that we may be permitted to finish the building of the Salt Lake temple from the foundation to the top stone thereof, even in every part. That the son of God, even our Lord, Jesus Christ, and the holy prophets, Joseph and Hyrum Smith, might be seen in their resurrected bodies by some in that house, be heard to speak, be felt and handled in that holy house, before the great day of the Lord shall come. Also, that all those holy temple might be well manned with good and sufficient teams of good and faithful workers, brethren and sisters, to perform holy ordinances for the living and for our venerable dead.

April 13th, Sunday. Attended meeting, administered to J. S. Johnson. He came sick from conference. Just received word our daughter Emma Josephine Clark. They have a fine son born, their first son. Also administered to my daughter, Brother Charles Parker's wife. She is sick.

April 20, Elder Johnson preached today, a very good talk. I consecrated oil and administered to our school teacher,

Brother Sevens. And also to my daughter Arwillia Clawson, she was healed.

April 24th. Our son-in-law's birthday, Oscar Rice, and we went up and took a good dinner with them.

July 14th. Our beloved daughter Jane Geneva and her good man, Byron Bybee, made a good feast and we with a great many others by invitation attended. We partook of a royal dinner, a feast of fat things as they had prepared in great abundance. This was her birthday and their wedding day. We surely did enjoy ourselves very much for we certainly do take pleasure in visiting and blessing our children for we have good children. Our God has graciously given or lent them to us. We bless them.

July 15th. Our daughter Laurinda E. Parker was safely delivered of a beautiful daughter born half past eight this evening. Mother and child are doing well. This day is the old folk's excursion. We were taken upon the cars and were so well treated, watered and fed, with a splendid dinner.

July 24th. We celebrate this day. Our people should never forget the mercy of God in bringing us here and planting us here in these rich and beautiful valleys of the mountains where we have been so wonderfully blessed.

September 4th. We attend a very good fast meeting in our meeting house in Hooper. A good turn out and a very

good sweet spirit. We fast and pay our fast offerings. We are blessed by the Lord.

October 2nd, This morning our beloved brother Emery Sales, Jr. departed this life. He had been very sick for some time. We and several of the elders had administered to him in the name of the Lord. We looked for him to recover, but he was appointed unto death and the Lord revealed not unto us that he would live. He was a very sedate, nice promising young man. It was the wisdom of God he should be taken away for he has a mighty and great and important work for him to perform in the spirit world. We do sympathize with his parents and friends.

October 6th. Took Sister Ausman and children to conference and they wished to visit their friends in Tooele. We attended one of the richest conferences that we have ever attended. The very rich influence of the spirit. The preaching by the elders was excellent. Their language was so meek and edifying. The Lord's tabernacle was filled to overflowing and thousands that could not obtain admittance. We enjoyed a nice sweet conference. The weather very favorable. The Lord is with us.

October 13th. Burt Simmons came in from Snake River with his mother, my beloved one, and his family to make a visit and he helped me some make some molasses and I let him take some home with him for himself and for Lell and my family there. Aunt Mary came down to see us a few days. She

went to the Logan temple and did work for her dear and very precious dead father and mother. She returned home with her son George. We do very much appreciate the society of our friends and especially the society of those we love so dearly. We visited some of our children in Farmington and some of our friends there.

October 19th. We attended a good conference at Ogden. President George Q. Cannon made himself more than interesting and the elders did talk so very, well to us.

November 16th, Sunday. We took Elder F. S. Johnson and his wife to Cainsville meetinghouse and attended there with them. After their missionary had talked about half an hour Bishop Peterson called upon us to occupy the time and we did so with pleasure.

November 22nd. I took my wife, Elder P. S. Johnson, on a visiting tour to Uintah a town at the north of Weber Canyon, some ten or twelve miles from Hooper City. We had a good visit with our son-in-law Byron Bybee and our daughter Lucy and others. On Sabbath attended meeting with the Saints in that place. The bishop called upon us to administer the gospel to the people and as Elder Stewart was there with us, we gave them a good preaching.

December 7th. Sunday, this morning I was sent for in haste. Myron Childs worse. We prayed for him and dedicated him unto the Lord. He must and will die. He departed this

life at 2 o'clock. He was a seventy, a very devout, nice young man of 20 years. His parents and friends take his death very hard and we feel to sympathize very much with them. We attend the funeral of Myron Childs, the eldest son of Bishop William Childs of the North Hooper Ward. Funeral held at our meetinghouse.

December 21st. Bishop Milton Atwood was buried today. He was the acting bishop of the 13th Ward (S.L. City).

December 26th. Amos and Lee Robinson came from Snake River. Her husband, Frederick Clark, is gone to England on a preaching mission.

### *January 1891*

January 1891. This is the first day of the New Year. The old year is gone, it gave us more in return and a new year has come. We feel to thank the Lord that we are spared and that we have done so well.

We took dinner with Brother and Sister Johnson. This is his birthday. He is [?] years old.

Our C. S. Robinson has returned home. He is a good boy.

January 4th. Our beloved and worthy daughter, Josephine E. Rose and children have returned home. Her husband, Erasmus Rose, has indulged in drinking and became abusive to her. She came to our place with some of her small children. He

repented sorely. He sent out and plead for her to come home. He promised faithfully he would not drink and that he would treat her better. Now, without a drink, he is a kind, good husband and father, a very ingenious, industrious, good man. We really hope he will let spirituous liquors entirely alone and save himself and his family.

I have let my farm to Jeddy and Willie (Blanthom) for this year.

January 18th. A two days conference in Ogden. President Cannon preached to a more than good and very full house. The singing was very excellent, music sublime. We visited Brother Elgren, anointed and blessed his wife. She will get well. I administered to two of his children sick and to Brother Starkey. He and some of his family are sick.

Also Laurinda and Wella at the poor house, they were sick. I have been visiting and administering to the sick very much and blessing the Saints striving to do good with all my might and mind as the prophets say.

January 23rd. I took hay to Ogden, visited Willie Robinson, found him a happy man, his wife Diana alive with a newborn son three hours old. He wished me to come and bless the child. It lived until it was eight days old and then died. We buried it today, the fourth of their sons.

February 1st. Took a grist to Kays Ward Mills. Stopped with my beloved daughter, Anna Maria Wilcox. Gave unto her

a patriarchal blessing and one also to her son Oliver Wilcox and he gave me one dollar. I went to my son Joseph Elijah and blessed him as he was sick and had a very good visit with them. LeGrand, my grandson. He was, as some say, on the underground but he feels well. He loves his two wives. I had given unto him a blessing some time before this.

February 4th. Went to the poor house (as they were keeping that for the county) and consecrated a bottle of oil and blessed Laurinda and her babe, children, and consecrated some bottles of oil.

February 6th. Sent an epistle, a letter to my son-in-law Frederick Clark in England. He is there on a mission. This morning Brother J. S. Johnson's house burned down with some of his furnishings and goods. It being a lumber house, they could not save it.

Young Nephi Hardy went directly around the neighborhood with a subscription paper. The brethren subscribed very liberally and he went directly to Ogden and got lumber so they could start to build a new house. In one week they had it built. My son Jeddy helped do the carpenter work. Brother and Sister Johnson came and stopped with us until it was done.

February 16th. John Wadsworth's wife was buried today. Elder F. J. Johnson preached her funeral sermon.

Brother Johnson's new house, built by the people of the ward, he speaks well of them and I say that the blessings of God rest down upon them they shall be blessed.

February 18th. My birthday. This morning I received from the Lord a very extensive and enlarged view of the promised blessings of God unto me. I am happy and have continued to be all day. I have received several presents, a nice hat, a splendid pair of shoes, a beautiful pair of slippers and from Jedda, a superb dinner. He said if the families of my children had not all been sick, that a multitude would have been here and would have surprised me and would have presented me with a fine overcoat. Then, would I have been more than happy, as it is I do bless them all and I say let the blessings of my God rest down henceforth and forever upon them. I have seen 80 long winters and the spirit doth manifest unto me, and some of the humble servants of God, have said that I should live just so long as I could desire to live. I have always labored hard and God has always been with me. My soul doth magnify the Lord and I do feel to honor him and the holy priesthood of my God, here upon the earth, even every appointment and ordination that I have been favored with, that hath been placed upon my head and also for every precious wife he has given unto me, for every child lent unto us by our Father in Heaven.



February 19th. Took Sister Johnson and her things to their new house. They moved today. They have been with us two weeks. Took Jeddy and family to the poor house. They take the train for home. I administered to several sick. It is a very sickly time and Rinda and several of our children are sick.

February 27th. Brothers Todd and Shores came to my house today for a blessing and they received a very good patriarchal blessing and our Will Blanthorn wrote them.

March 6th. Laurinda Parker came to see me yesterday. They have gotten well and have received letters from Samuel who says there are several who are sick there yet. But, the most of them are recovering and our own children are all getting better. Brother William Garner's baby died but the most of the sick are getting better.

March 15th. We attended meeting today and talked to the Saints. William Robinson came to see us. He is moved to the Basin and our William Blanthorn has gone to the city to attend a Democratic rally. He is a married man and will tend my farm this season.

March 18th. Willie came this evening with his family and Amos came down from the valley. He, with Aunt Linda, have gone to Farmington. Our grandson Jeddy is very sick. The floods are raging in that place.

March 27th. Brought my wife Laurinda and Ella to Hooper. Received word that my dear brother Ebenezer Robinson is

dead. He died March 11th, 1891. His home was in Davis City, Decater County, Iowa. He has lived in that place for many years and has been editing a pamphlet, a little paper called the Return. He was sent away with Sidney Rigdon by the prophet Joseph Smith and the prophet told him to go with Rigdon, for him, and counsel him and never leave nor forsake him. His sending him away was not long before the prophet was martyred in Carthage Jail. Although my brother claimed and seemed to be firm in the faith he believed that the prophet had fallen from his high calling and he was at the time and for some time before his death advocating the cause, and doctrine of David Whitmer, one of the three witnesses to the Book of Mormon.

But, we believe and do know verily that the Prophet Joseph Smith lived and died and was a true and holy man of God and that all the principles and doctrines that he taught were clean, pure and holy, as God is holy and that he was not a fallen prophet oh never, no.

At some future time, when I feel like it, I may give a brief history of my brother Ebenezer and of Sidney Rigdon and something of David Whitmer. In so doing, we will try to deal justly and fairly with them, as we should with all men. But, we do firmly hold that all men whether great or small, friend or foe, that do discard either of the principles of the Prophet Joseph or either of the doctrines which he taught, practiced

and left with this Church, are apostates. That they, and all such will have to repent and obtain pardon of all their sins or they will certainly be shut out of the Church and kingdom of our God even so, amen.

March 29th. President Daniel H. Wells departed this life March 24th, 1891. His funeral was very impressive and solemn. He has left a good record, he was a wise counselor, a great and a very good man, greatly beloved and much respected in our Church by the people.

We took the streetcar and dropped in to Sister Jane Slades. We found her very sick, or rather weak. She had been sick for a long time. She was very humble. She wished me to pray for her and administer to her that she might live and I did inquire of the Lord what I might, with his sanction, do for her and the Lord told me that I might bless her and that he would forgive her and that inasmuch as she would believe, she should be healed and remain for a season to enjoy her new home and the society of her friends and have time to reflect and to prepare to meet her God.

I did bless her in the name of the Lord. We told her that God, for Christ's sake, should forgive her sins that she must humble herself before him. That the Lord loved her for the integrity of her heart and for the liberality of her soul and because he loved her, he chastened her. That it was the hand of God that she must repent and acknowledge his hand. We

prayer for her and blessed the medicine she had to take that it should not hurt her and the faith that might be exercised for her that it might do her some good. We told her that all men had faith, but the true and genuine saving faith, there was but little in the world at the present. She replied to me, you always have it. I said yes, a little of it.

Her children and friends with her were unbelievers. They would have the doctor to continue his visits and she must continue her medicines, but she did get better. I felt if we could get her away from them and keep her awhile with us and get some faith in her and get her to be baptized for the remission of her sins and also for her health, that we might be able to save her. She might receive the blessings that she desired.

April 5th, Sunday. We attend meeting. The house was full and the preaching excellent, the music good. There was a very general attendance of the authorities, only Joseph. F. Smith was not with us. We miss him, we hope it will not be long before we will have him with us again, to hear his voice and to receive his counsel and his instructions.

The drift of the teachings was to instruct, edify, the believers and to convince the believers and unbelievers of the truth of the great work of God on the earth and to persuade all men to repent and to obey the gospel of the Son of God.

April 6th. Went to Sister Relies Atwood's. We blessed her. She felt blessed, stayed with them over night and had a good visit.

The tabernacle full, the assembly hall also. A splendid meeting and we enjoyed this conference hugely. We feel very thankful for the privilege we have of meeting with the Saints, of beholding holy apostles and prophets, holy patriarchs and seventies, elders and holy high priesthood, men inspired of God holding the holy priesthood of God.

April 19 and 20. We attend our quarterly conference in Ogden. The tabernacle filled to overflowing. There were four of the Twelve and others who did talk so good to the Saints and surely we were richly and highly entertained. The speaking was divinely inspired. We did enjoy this conference very much.

April 16. We attend meeting and I was called upon to address the Saints today. The Lord is with us. I went to the poor house to administer to Willie's sick child. Jeddy and his family came up. We have been driving a flowing well in my pasture. We drove 170 feet of pipe, a good flow of water. We thank the Lord for this blessing. Took Jeddy and family home.

May 3rd, Sunday. Attend meetings in Farmington. Opened by prayers and a good meeting.

May 7th. Fasted today and attended the funeral of old Sister Hardy, Elders Case and Johnson. Preached and went

to Salt Lake City to see the President of the United States of America. He was in Salt Lake City today (May 9) he was very enthusiastically received (President Harrison). He was especially received enthusiastically by thousands of the children. He seemed very much pleased. He made several good speeches. He left the city at 12 o'clock.

I saw President Woodruff, had a good chat with him at his house, got his signature to go to Logan temple to do a work for the living and other dead friends. Visited some in Farmington, administered to some sick, wrote a letter and sent to President Woodruff. Wrote and sent letters, one to Aunt Mary north and one to Mary J. West south.

April 17th. I drove to Wellsville on my way to Logan temple. Stayed with Brother Whiting in Logan. Drove to Logan temple and met my son Joseph Elijah Robinson and my daughter Anna Maria Wilcox with her husband James Wilcox and Loren, my eldest son Oliver's oldest son, also Henry Wilcox my eldest daughter's Anna Maria's eldest son and her daughter Julia Steed.

May, 1891. These two of my children were our eldest daughter Anna Maria, she was born June 8, 1838 and Joseph Elijah, our youngest son, he was born February 2, 1849. These two are the children of my first wife Maria Wood. She had born me seven children, namely Oliver Lee, Ebenezer J., Anna Maria, Joseph, and Zephenia Wood and Mary Elizabeth. All these had

to be adopted to us as they were born to us before we were sealed according to the law of heaven. But Joseph Elijah was born to us after we had received our endowments and sealed. This week we had all those children sealed to us, adopted and we got endowments for several of my dead friends. We had been baptized for the spirit and the blessing of Almighty God rested down upon us abundantly. I put up and stayed with Brother and Sister Benjamin Williams.

They entertained us very kindly. I was made more than welcome and was more than happy with them.

May 20th, We were all at the temple. Had all those children adopted and my daughter Anna Maria was endowed for Mary (Rube or Rule, dead). She was sealed to me. Also she received endowments for my own mother, Mary Brown, and my dear sister Asenath and my son-in-law James Wilcox and my grandsons Loren J, Robinson and Henry Wilcox. They all helped me get endowments for my dead friends, endowments for 12 at this time. While there, this week, I also gave five or six patriarchal blessings. One to Sister Mary Williams and her sister Rebecca, their widowed daughter, she is such a good woman as well as her mother and all her sisters are very splendid good women, they are a choice, good family. We also gave to Brother Williams' son-in-law, William Evans and his wife Emma, all good patriarchal blessings.

Also, I found in the temple a brother, Joseph Robinson. He is a resident of, or his family resides in Millard County, Fillmore. He is at the temple doing work for all the dead. I had never seen him before but he has been at Snowflake, Arizona and has seen my daughter Mary Jane West there. He had heard of me there. She (Mary Jane West) showed him some of my letters. He read them and he then and there vowed that if the Lord would be willing, he certainly would find me and that he would get from me a patriarchal blessing. He told me that he knew by my handwriting that I and his fathers came from one family. That we were connected and I had a considerable chat with him. Went with him, took dinner with him and with his two sons where he boarded and I gave to him a good patriarchal blessing. He gave me two dollars. I told him, no, I did not charge him anything. His son wrote the blessing.

I also went and saw my friend and son, James Simmons living at Hyde's Park a few miles north of Logan. Took dinner with them and blessed a very sick child of theirs. He, George, used to live with me. He was with us in and before and after the great and important move south in 1858. He is a good boy. He seems like one of my family, I bless him. While at Logan this week I also visited the agricultural farm and college and barn, far up above the temple up on the bench. A grandson of Brother Williams that attended the college school went with me and showed me a good deal more because he was



acquainted with the farm and barn. It is well worth one's time to go and see it, a grand sight.

[Editor's note: J.L.R. tells about his return from Logan and passing by the Hot Springs summer resort crowded with pleasure seekers. There were many carriages and cars there seemingly waiting to take loads of passengers back to Ogden].

May 24. When I arrived home I found our daughter Josephine with some of her children at our house. Her man had been drinking again and had abused her but he says he feels very bad about it. He said he will not drink nor abuse her any more. We would be very glad to exercise faith for him. We pray for him, hope he will let strong drink alone for without drink he is a smart, intelligent and very ingenious, industrious good man. Oh Lord, wilt thou help him.

May 25. Our twins birthday, 31 years old today. Let the blessings of God rest down upon them.

June 3rd. I took the girls to Uintah, visited with Byron and Janie, We attend a fast meeting but there were only a few in attendance. The president wished me to talk to them. And the spirit of the Lord rested down abundantly upon me.

June 10. We partook of a royal dinner in the Farmington meeting house, got up by that ward for the old folks. We received it very thankfully. There were several visitors from Salt Lake, a very Interesting time indeed.

July 1891. John Wood from Richfield, Morgan County, came down to inform me that my grandson Frederick Park, the only son of my daughter Emma Sophia Clark, was lying at the point of death. I prayed for her and for her dear child. He was a bright and promising child. His father was in Old England on a preaching mission and we did earnestly entreat the Lord to spare that child for his parents' and our sakes if it could be pleasing unto the Lord. But, we felt to say, not our will but thine oh Lord be done. The child was appointed unto death. He died about 1 o'clock today. We feel to sympathize very much with his parents for surely they are good children Latter-day Saints. We say, God bless them. We pray our Father in Heaven to give unto them supporting grace and that he would sanctify this sad bereavement to their present and everlasting good.

My son William, her brother, went with me. We attended the funeral. It took place today, July 16. Her neighbors, brethren and sisters, were so very kind and friendly just as they should be. They were so much so that we not only felt to bless them but we did bless them in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ.

I was invited along with others to speak at the funeral and in my remarks I felt to comfort the mourners and try to instruct the Saints. We did say that "that child, lying before us, should have power and influence in the spirit world to do a good work for his parents and friends.

[Editor's note: J.L.R. then outlines the promises of the resurrection and that the mother would have the privilege of raising her son.]

July 19 and 20. We attended a profitable conference in Ogden. Apostles Lyman, Richards, and Cannon. They brought us good sound doctrine. They were very interesting, but they hewed us down to the quick. They made us appear if Saints at all that we were very poor ones. They made us ashamed. We resolved to improve. Yes we must do better.

July 23rd, 24th. We drove to Farmington. We had received a letter from Jedediah that they would celebrate at Lake Park, wishing us to come and attend with them. We, with a multitude of the people from Farmington assembled at the park. We had a very interesting and pleasant time. The weather was lovely. We celebrated the 24th of July for the day, that our dear brethren, the pioneers of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, did enter this large and beautiful valley of the Great Salt Lake, 44 years ago today.

Let us now look back some 50 or 60 years and very briefly sketch some of the most particular incidents of this now, great and growing and very interesting, despised people.

[Editor's note: J.L.R. reviews briefly the conditions and circumstances in the history of the Church.]

July 25. A young sister, a near neighbor to us in Farmington, wished me to bless her little son. She says her little son is some unwell and she felt anxious that I should give unto it a

patriarchal blessing. She said she would rather that I should bless it than any other man she ever saw. I thanked her and in the name of the Lord gave unto her son a good patriarchal blessing.

Drove to Hooper, found the water turned in and all well with our farm and garden.

August 1st. Drove to Farmington, visited some and administered to a very sick grandchild.

August 2nd. Drove to Salt Lake City, saw President Smith of the Davis Stake of Zion and President W. Woodruff and conversed with them upon the subject of doing work for our dead. My eldest son, Oliver Lee, found all right with him and attended meeting in the large tabernacle. A full good meeting as usual. Received some very good pictures, photographs, sent one to my nephew, Milton Robinson in Pennsylvania.

August 3rd and 4th, Came home and drove to Ogden. Visited some that evening and gave three patriarchal blessings to Joseph Obern and to his wife as they were going north. They were very anxious for their blessings and one to his brother-in-law.

November 1891. Aunt Jane Slade died November 21st, 1891. She is gone. We tried to save her from death. The Lord told me he would forgive her and that I might bless her and if she would believe she should remain for a season and enjoy her new home and the society of her friends and have time to

reflect and prepare to meet her God, We were really in hopes we could get her well enough that she could come and stop with us awhile, that we might get sufficient faith in her that she might get rebaptized, renew her covenants and baptized for her health. We did feel very anxious to her to save herself. She was a very good woman, for the Lord said he loved her for her integrity of heart and for the liberality of her soul. Her sister, Aunt Laurinda, has gone to attend her funeral.

December 1st. Went to the Logan temple, received anointings and second endowments for my eldest son Oliver Lee Robinson as proxy with his two wives now living, namely Anna and Esther. His first wife, Lucy, who was dead. We do esteem it a great blessing from the Lord our God that we can enter into the holy temples and receive holy ordinances for ourselves and for all our venerable dead. My eldest daughter there, Anna Maria Wilcox, she received endowments for Sarah Clark, my father's first wife, also for Mary Lee, my mother's mother, my daughters-in-law, Anna and Esther Robinson received the endowments for my mother's mother, my grandmother Mary Lee. Also for my eldest half-sister, Aurilia Robinson, wife of Orrin Paper.

On my way to Logan, found several sick. I administered to them and stopped as usual with Brother and Sister Williams. They received me with great kindness. I gave to one of their neighbors a patriarchal blessing and one also to Brother Elijah's

daughter. Sister Williams gave me two pounds of butter and several pounds of good cheese. She is very kind to me.

Drove to Wellsville. Stayed with Brother and Sister Parkinson, they treat me very kindly. It is snowing.

December 6th. Stopped with Brother Jensen and family. Blessed them and arrived home safe this evening. Jeddy and George are finishing Charles' house and they are building a house for William Baker. Oscar Rice has moved into my place in Hooper. He and Jedediah will take my farm. I shall be at liberty to go on a mission, to visit and bless the Saints. That will please me very much.

December 24th. I took Jeddy and George with tool chest to Farmington. Had a good Christmas dinner with them and Rast S. Rose and their families and while there I gave to my daughter Mary Lysia and to three other children namely Ezra C., and Mary and Burt, very good, sound patriarchal blessings. Received several letters, one from Charles E. Robinson, New York City and one from son Solomon from Huntington, Emery .County. He wants some help to get his 'little children to his sisters in Arizona. I sent him \$25. We had a good time in Farmington for the Lord is with us all the time.

My children help me some. They donate some for Solomon. He is their beloved brother, his good wife has been dead some two years and the poor boy is left alone with several little helpless children. His sister, his mother's only daughter, living

in Arizona said if he would get his children to her, she would take care of them.

*January 3rd, 1892*

January 3rd, 1892, Sunday. We have two missionaries. They talked good to us, they are sent to spend some time with us as missionaries to try to wake up the Saints, to encourage them that they may better do and perform their duties, that they may become more united and that they might enjoy a greater portion of the holy spirit and also to convert all the sinners if possible. These brothers are Parker and Butler and are in my estimation very highly recommended for they bring a good spirit with them and are humble and meek.

January 10th. We attend conference in Ogden Tabernacle. The house is full to overflowing. On Sunday, Apostles John Henry Smith and Abram H. Cannon spoke twice each, more than good, we felt and said Lord we do thank thee for the great blessings of sitting and hearing these precious inspired words of truth.

January 23rd. We received very encouraging words and news. Utah will be becoming a state. The bitterness and the very hostile feeling against Utah and the Mormons are wonderfully giving away and the prospects look more favorable than ever before for Utah. She must sometime receive

statehood for we are sure of it, we prophesied it years ago that this mighty nation, before she goes out of power or before the kingdom is taken from the Gentiles, they will certainly have to give Utah statehood that she will become a free and sovereign and independent state.

February 18th. My birthday, 81 today. They, the girls got me up a good dinner. We had a good company and we enjoyed ourselves extremely well. My daughters Anna Maria Wilcox and Laurinda Parker gave \$1.50. They shall certainly be blessed of the Lord that they shall never want. They shall become rich. My grandson Joseph Robinson and Jedediah came from Farmington with a sleigh. I truly feel thankful to my God for his great promises and blessings unto me and mine.

February 23rd. I am reading some old letters from my aged father and sisters and friends, very interesting. I received a very welcome letter from my daughter Mary J, West, written on birthday.

March 15th. My wife and I visit my son William Robinson. He now lives in his own house in Ogden, We had a good visit with him and I blessed their first daughter at 8 days old and her name is Lydia Celestia.

March 17th. We attend a celebration of the 50th birthday of the Relief Society, 50 years ago, March 17th, 1842, the prophet Joseph Smith met with the sisters in Nauvoo and he approved the organization of the Relief Society. It was done



by inspiration and behold it has been or proved to be a great success. It is proving a great and a grand helpmate to the holy priesthood. We were invited to talk to the assembled congregation on that occasion. I did remember well the day it was organized, for I was in Nauvoo. I had arrived there in '41, August 1841.

March 18th. Our daughter Janie and her husband came to see us. We were very much pleased to see them.

March 19th. I took Byron and Welly to Ogden. He bought for me a pair of pants.

I received a letter from my son Solomon. He informs me that he has arrived safely in Arizona with his little children. He was happily received by his sister and family and he feels very thankful to God and to them and their families for their kindness. They are all well. He is well pleased with the country and prospects.

April 3rd. We are preparing for conference. It is very stormy these days, my health is improving some, thank the Lord.

April 3rd. Aunt Laurinda, Oscar and Well a go down on the cars and attend the 62nd Annual Conference of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. It is very stormy but there is a very large body of people like we never have seen before in Salt Lake City. We never had better preaching. We saw very interesting sights on Wednesday. The Lord did favor us greatly on this day. This temple of our God is truly a very

grand structure and the thousands upon thousands of people witnessing the laying the topstone on this temple and the shouting hallelujah and glory to God in the highest which filled the air, the waving of handkerchiefs, was something that can never be forgotten. The covenant we made to finish that house that must not be forgotten nor be neglected. My prayer is, oh God, my Heavenly Father, wilt thou graciously inspire thy Saints to perform that work within the time specified and wilt thou give unto them means and ability to accomplish it that it may be dedicated to God our Heavenly Father the next April conference and that we may live to assist in that laudable work. Let thy servants Wilford Woodruff and his counselors live to dedicate that house unto the Lord our God and furthermore we do humbly ask that we, or at least some of us, have the unspeakable privilege of seeing in that house the faces and hearing the voice of the prophet, our beloved president Joseph Smith. Also, may we be found worthy and have the privilege of seeing the face and hearing the voice of the Lamb of God which taketh away the sins of the world.

The angel Moroni was placed soon after we left. He has a large trumpet raised at his mouth looking east. He is that angel that John the Baptist saw flying through the midst of heaven having the everlasting gospel to preach to them that dwell on the earth.

While in Farmington, I visited my daughter Anna Man a Wilcox. Made her a good visit and others of my children and found them all well. I wrote and mailed one good letter to my family north, feeling much better now.

April 17th. It is storming this morning, but I attend conference in Ogden. Was called in to anoint and bless a very sick sister, the wife of Brother Tory. I anointed and blessed her, but she was appointed unto death. I fasted and prayed earnestly for her that the Lord would spare her with her good husband and young family of little children. But we did not have sufficient faith. She died this morning, April 18th, at about 6 o'clock. Left a young babe of five months old.

April 20th. We attend the funeral of Sister Tory today. Went to his house before the funeral, blessed his little motherless babe, it is quite sick. We think the mother will want it for company. If she does, she will get it and she shall raise it to womanhood after they wake up in resurrection.

April 21st. I attend the funeral of Lester J. Harrick today at 2 o'clock. The Ogden tabernacle is full to overflowing. He was a fine, as perfect a man as gets to in the flesh. The services were very solemn.

I drove to and put up with my well beloved son-in-law and daughter Janie and Byron Bybee and found my dearly beloved daughter, Josephine Rose and two of her children there.

April 23rd. I heard this morning that my second son, Ebenezer Robinson, was in Farmington and as I had some business that I wished to transact there, I took my daughter Josephine Rose and her little children and drove immediately to Farmington and presently found my prodigal son, E. J. Robinson, my dear boy, the Lord my God bless him. I did embrace him and he did embrace me. We hugged and kissed each other, I blessed him and he blessed me. I was so glad to see him and he appeared to be so very glad to see me. He had been gone only 14 years. He went with me immediately down to our place. We had a good chat all the evening at Jeddy's place.

April 25th. At half past four this morning our son Jedediah became the father of a newborn son. A nice plump promising child, mother and child doing well and the father very happy. He immediately drove to Salt Lake City and brought up Laura's mother to nurse and bless her little child.

April 26th. Jeddy with his little son, Jeddediar, came to Hooper with me to help us a few days on the farm. My son Ebenezer J. declined coming with us at this time. He said he was looking every day for news by mail which would come there and after he had received it he would come up on the cars. The Lord bless the lad and his family.

May 6th. I had been laboring hard this week, writing and sometimes late evenings and on this day without much fire I had severe numbness of my right hand, rheumatism in my

right arm. It became very lame and sore. I also had severe sickness at my stomach and for a few hours I felt very bad, but the sisters washed and rubbed me with camphor and we called upon the Lord and rested my arm from writing a few days and the Lord blessed me and I was able to pursue my labors.

May 10. Jeddediar, with his mother, came home to Hooper. They had been in Salt Lake and Farmington on business and visiting. My son Ebenezer came with them to visit us here and also some of my extensive family in these parts. We are wonderfully well pleased to see him here, yes all his friends and relatives. Ebenezer is very zealous in the latter day work, but he argues that young Joseph is the man to stand at the head of the Church. He thinks Brigham and the Twelve are usurpers and that polygamy was a very wrong step and that it certainly will have to be repented of and that all of us, if we wish to please God, and be saved, in his kingdom we must certainly halt, file right, come into line, be baptized or we will miss the figure.

But verily, verily we say unto him that we do firmly believe and do verily know that the Prophet Joseph Smith was and is a holy prophet and that he did receive the holy gospel in its fullness and that he did receive the keys of the holy priesthood also the keys of the kingdom of God on this earth and that he did give those keys unto the Twelve Apostles, the Twelve the

Lord gave to him with authority and commandment to preach the gospel and that Brigham Young was duly and properly selected by the Twelve and by the Lord for his great work.

May 11. I took my son Ebenezer to Ogden. We had a good visit with my son William Robinson and family. Took them through a portion of the large and beautiful city of Ogden. It is very surprising and marvelous to behold so large and beautiful a city in so short a time. Surely, I felt you say, what hath God wrought.

May 26. I took my son Ebenezer to Farmington. We had a good visit with my daughter Anna Maria Wilcox and family and with his brother Joseph and family and while there my son-in-law George Clawson and his father and my son Eben built a new base to my buggy.

I came to Hooper, several of our little children were very sick. We anointed, administered to and blessed them and prayed for them, and they are better.

June 5th. We attended some beautiful conferences, one in Centerville and one in Salt Lake City. A very interesting young men's conference. The counselors of the First Presidency and several of the Twelve Apostles were there and took a very active part.

We visited some in Salt Lake City and viewed with wonder and astonishment that large and beautiful city. As we drove through portions of it, we did greatly admire its beauty and

its rapid growth, growing larger and faster and our precious, beautiful temple where the mighty angel with the trumpet in his mouth. We enjoyed the sights with a great deal of admiration and with pleasure.

We drove several miles away over the Jordan and southwest into a little town and had a very good visit with Aunt Ann Cummings and with a family of our late Aunt, Jane Slade. Aunt Ann and also Jane were very liberal unto their sister, Aunt Rinda my wife. They gave her many things, loaded our buggy with clothing and useful articles which made us feel good toward them and we felt to bless them.

June 8th. This being the 54th birthday of my eldest daughter, Anna Maria R. Wilcox. Some of the children proposed to have a surprise party. Consequently, they prepared a royal feast and took it. We went a good number of us and happily surprised her and her family and we did have a royal, good time.

June 18th. We received a visit from our dear sons, Ebenezer and Joseph Elijah and wife and my eldest daughter (her sister) and her husband, James Wilcox. I did feel to bless them. We did thank our God we had a regular good feast. We took dinner with Charles and Laurinda.

June 19th. Joseph, and his wife Dora, entertained with some beautiful songs. They returned home, we had a good time. My son Jedediah helping me fitting on the [Bony?] and he painting my carriage.

The weather is cold and wet, very rainy, I received a severe cold, an influenza cold and cough which was very severe and which lasted me for some time. Yet, through the blessings of the Lord, I have done considerable writing and labor on my carriage preparing to take a trip and a mission north, and several trips to Ogden and Farmington and Salt Lake City.

I blessed Brother Ezra T. Clark. As he was sorely afflicted with an ugly carbuncle upon the back of his neck. He is a great man and if the riches that God is bestowing and is about to bestow on him do not overpower and destroy him he shall win a great prize and obtain a glorious kingdom. He will get well. I did bless him in the name of the Lord.

I also blessed my grandson who was sick, Laury's and Jeddy's promising nice little son.

My grandson, Henry Robinson, gave to me a nice summer hat. I promised to remember him until he was old and a long time afterwards. He is a good, young man, the youngest son of my eldest son Oliver and his first wife, Maria, and will someday be great and good in the church.

My son Joseph gave me five dollars, my son-in-law George Clawson five, and Laury one dollar and E. F. Clark one dollar and fifty cents. My good daughter, Joseph Eve Rose gave to me all she had by her and my very good son William gave to me some to help me. This is for my benefit. There are many others who would have done liberally if I had offered



the hat to them. But, I say, that all of the good liberal souls that would have done something for me, as well as those that have done something for my benefit, whether much or little, they shall be blessed, yea my God shall abundantly bless all such. Yea, all those that contribute something for the relief and benefit of a humble servant of the true and living God, shall be blessed in their bodies, in their families and in their houses. They shall have friends raised up to them in times of need I do and will bless them.

July 4th. The people of Hooper put up a bowery, made preparations and the good people of the town turned out in mass with their beautiful brass band and they seemed to do justice to the righteous cause of celebrating the glorious 4th of July, the birthday of our American independence, or rather the day in which the Constitution of and for our American people was read in public.

July 17 and 18. My cold and cough is fast giving way and we are faithfully laboring for Zion. I am preparing to take a trip into Cache Valley and the Snake River country.

We attend a very interesting conference in Ogden. We were very richly entertained by several of the Twelve and others and by the reports of the wards and stake which are in a very good condition. My wife Laurinda with me attended the meetings. My son William also. He did help me some put the cover on my carriage and my wife Laurinda also helped

me. Also my son-in-law Oscar and his wife, really they gave me a good lift and I do bless them all.

July 24th. Our people celebrate Pioneer Day in all the settlements in the mountains. We should never forget the day, neither the hand that brought this very much blessed people far across a long and weary desert into these blessed valleys.

July 29th, Friday. I leave my home in Hooper in the name of the Lord, in my carriage drawn by a nice beautiful span of horses which I did raise or cared for rather and which the Lord did graciously give unto me for which I do feel very thankful. I drove to and stopped with Brother and Sister Jensen, a very choice family of Latter-day Saints living at the south end of the beautiful city of Brigham. This family did make me so very welcome and I did leave my blessings with them.

July 30, Saturday. I drove through Box Elder valley, a very nice rich valley thickly settled and highly cultivated by our beloved brethren and Saints from Denmark, a very enterprising, industrious, good people. God bless them and prosper them.

In Wellsville, Cache Valley, I put up with Brother and Sister Timothy and Jane Parkinson. They were especially kind to me. They did insist that I should stop with them that night. Had a good visit with them and with Brother Whiting and his family. They also pressed me to stay with them. They were all so very kind.

July 31st, Sunday morning. I did bless and left my friends and brother in this thrifty and beautiful city. Found Brother and Sister Green and wife, old acquaintance of many years gone by: Took breakfast with them and had to promise to come and make them a good visit.

Drove to Logan City just in time to attend a good quarterly conference, well attended, with several visiting authorities.

Visited Brother and Sister Benjamin Williams and family, my old friends, and stopping place they do make me more than welcome. I met Brother Everett D. Norton who found me at the meeting. I had not seen him for many years before. He said I must call and make him a visit. I had been well acquainted with him and wife and with her father also. Sister Williams gave me a good chunk of cheese and I attended meeting forenoon.

August 1st. I drove north past and through several nice and thrifty towns and cities, namely Hyde Park, Richmond, and Lewiston. Stopped with Brother and Sister Everett VanNorton and family and was very cordially and heartily entertained by them. I held a very lengthy, interesting talk with him. He seemed very kind and sociable, but somewhat skeptical. I tried to ride him up again. I do pray for him and for all such that our God would in his mercy, take all such in hand and if necessary chasten them severely sufficient to bring them up to the square.

Verily, I now wish to say to my dearly beloved family and friends and to all Latter-day Saints that I, Joseph Lee Robinson, have entered my name upon the docket. I have taken passage in that safe, reliable old ship Zion for life. I have entered into covenant, God being my helper, to serve God, my Heavenly Father through time and all eternity to come. That God has seen fit in his wisdom to place upon my head the holy Melchizedek priesthood and has caused to be placed upon ray head also several very high and responsible offices namely elder, high priest and also the holy bishopric. And, again to the office of high councilor and I can say that I have faithfully and to the best of my ability officiated in all of these offices and also the last but not the least, the very high and very office of patriarch. When I was ordained to that high and holy office to bless my posterity and friends it was said that whomsoever you bless, shall be blessed and whomsoever you curse, shall be cursed, whatsoever you promise to anyone in the name of the Lord and by the virtue of my calling and priesthood that promise shall be verified. And also the Holy Ghost will say that I was a patriarch of the highest order and that I should hold that position through time and all eternity. Now with all this priesthood and holy callings upon me I can partially, also realize something of the obligation that I am under to God to faithfully perform my duty in these holy callings and I do consider myself a missionary. I have taken

upon myself a mission for life and through all eternity to labor exclusively for Zion.

August 2nd. Passed Weston and in Clifton I found two brothers working in their blacksmith shop. They were very fine, nice young men. One of them had seen me before. He was a brother-in-law of my stepson Eli Simmons who lived in Marsh Valley. They thought I would not be able to reach there. I must stop with them, have a good visit. I was made so very welcome, had a good talk with them, gained some information with regard to the country and their people. They requested me to call upon them again. I left them with a heart full of gratitude and thanksgiving to Almighty God for friends and for so very kind treatment from everybody. I left my blessing with them also.

In Marsh Valley at Oneida I found a store and in that store Brother Thomas [Black?], he was the owner, he kept the post office and so he learned who I was. He was so very kind to me. His daughter got us a good dinner. He opened a can of oysters. He gave me candies and my horse oats. He would not take any money from me. It seemed he could not do enough for me but sent me to his family with a blessing. I blessed him also with his house and forever. His eldest son was there. He piloted me to his home six miles northwest. They have a large and beautiful farm (it is on the Indian reservation). His wife, a very extra, royal good woman, a precious mother of

six interesting family of boys. A more peaceful, industrious family I think I never saw. These boys carried on the farm. They owned a selfbinder and more and horse rake. It was very interesting to see one of her sons mowing the grass, one raking hay, two or three hauling and some others at other work. Not one dispute did I hear as each one worked in his place. I felt in my heart to bless the sons.

August 4th, fast day. Sister Mary, she did remember me so well in Farmington when she was about a small girl, and she was so pleased to see me there with them. She said, it is fast day, will you stop and go to meeting with me today? I said, yes, I will both fast and go to meeting with you today. The boys said there would be a ward conference held here Saturday and Sunday and some of the authorities would be there and that they would have a good meeting and they joined in wishing me to stay.

We attended fast meeting. There was a very good turnout and the brethren talked very well. Several were confirmed who had been baptized.

By invitation I did talk to them and left with them a spirit of blessing which came upon me to bless that people in the name of the Lord and by the authority of the holy priesthood.

August 5th, Friday morning. Sister Henderson gave me a nice cake and a new loaf of bread. She thanked me so very much for my visit and told me how much she felt blessed.

They said they did wish me to come and see them again. I blessed them and thanked them very kindly. One of her little sons got on a horse and piloted me out to the main road. I left with a light and joyful heart as the Lord was with me and he had graciously said to me you shall never want. So I was blessed on my journey two days and Saturday evening before sunset I arrived safely at our home and place at Willow Creek. Saw Amos at his place. He saw me coming and met me and came with me and I with joy and thanksgiving again met my beloved daughter Lucy. She ran and met me and sprang into my carriage and gave me a very hearty welcome kiss and I was so very thankful and blessed, pleased .to see them and they to see me. I found them all well and in comfortable circumstances.

August 7th, Sabbath morning. I find myself with my dear ones at home in Snake River Valley. It looks very natural but with a good deal of improvements. I felt well and very thankful to Almighty God that our lives were spared, that I had been so wonderfully blessed on my journey here.

I was very much pleased to hear the word, we are all going to meeting today, will you go with us father. Yes, I said, I think so.

Their bishop had proposed that they practice meeting at 11 o'clock and have their Sunday School at the same time. The main reason for this was because of the scattered condition

of the people that it would save them so much travel. Also, it would hold the children for the meeting.

Well they had a very nice Sunday School and meeting with a good group of people and the spirit of the Lord was there. I was called upon to address them and I did feel it so with much pleasure. The spirit of the Lord was with me in great abundance.

In coming to this place I was happily surprised and very much pleased to behold the many large canals, full of water that had been constructed since I was here the last time. Also, the many new homes and the many large and rich fields of wheat which to me looks far more precious than gold. I did preach a gospel sermon to them.

On our way home we called and took supper with Brother and Sister Knowland and family. They are a very quiet, good interesting family.

I am resting here and writing and visiting a part of this week. My good wife, Mary, did make me some shirts and repaired my clothes.

We went to Lewisville and visited with our children Harriett, Alice, with her husband Joseph Jones and their dear little children and several others. They too are getting rich in this splendid, good country. He has a large rich farm with an abundance of oats, wheat and potatoes and lucerne hay. Also a nice, new house. They are a couple of very smart, in-



teresting, industrious children and are greatly favored of the Lord. He has given to them, as the fruits of their union, a son and a daughter, two very bright, smart little children, yes, as smart as a whip.

They have set up the family alter in this house and are trying to be Saints, which thing doth greatly please me.

August 14 and 15, Sunday and Monday. The Bannock stake of Zion did hold a very interesting, good conference in the Lewisville meetinghouse. We attend the same and Brother Thomas Ricks, their president, said it was the largest and best conference that had ever been held in the Bannock stake of Zion. Elder Seymore Young did entertain that people at this very interesting conference. He spoke very extremely well. Apostle John Henry Smith and others were very interesting also.

I have written two letters and sent them to my family in Farmington and Hooper.

August 18th. We came home and found our bishop raking hay (we should have stated that this, our bishop, is my very worthy stepson Alfonso Bird Simmons). He has a very smart little wife with an interesting little family of children. He has one son and three daughters.

Also George Simmons, he has a very interesting good wife with two very smart, pretty little children, a daughter and

son. He also is one of my very worthy stepsons, the bishop's second counselor.

Brother Amman Shurtleff is a brother to our very much respected and beloved brother and president Shurtleff, president of the Weber Stake of Zion.

August 18. We did attend a very good interesting meeting held in the (Iona) meetinghouse. A good ward, some six or eight miles easterly from Eagle Rock. There were several of the good sisters from Salt Lake City, namely Sisters Horn and Freeze, with President Ricks' first wife they had attended the conference, held one meeting in the evening, and gave good talks to the sisters and people.

August 21st, Sunday. Attended meeting with my wife. Bishop Simmons presiding, we were very highly entertained by the preaching and the talks of three of the brethren. We consecrated one bottle of oil and feel extremely happy in the service of the Lord.

[Editor's note: One-half of page 161 and pages 162 through 165 of J.L.R.'s journal are written with such light ink that they are too difficult to read. Consequently, we are skipping to page, his numbering, 166.]

September 25th, My wife, Mary and I, this morning, broke a fast of three days which we did successfully make unto our God and I do testify that the Lord was well pleased with that

sacrifice and he did forgive us and did pour out his blessings abundantly upon us.

By her request, I blessed her in the name of the Lord and she did manifest and her countenance did show that she was greatly blessed of the Lord. I am very certain that I did receive a marvelous blessing from the hand of God and in answer to my prayer I did receive by the testimony of the Holy Spirit some promises and things of great importance. We did fast from Thursday evening, 7 o'clock to Monday morning, 8 o'clock. Surely the Lord our God was and is with us. We expect that through our faithfulness and the grace of God we shall prevail and triumph most graciously, even so.

September 26th. Aunt Mary wrote a patriarchal blessing that I placed upon the head of our eldest son, Lee Sidwells, and also one upon the head of Anna Peterson, a nice young daughter of Zion. We feel to say, let the blessings of our God rest down upon the two that their hearts and hands may run together. That they might become one and remain so forever. They are very good children, God bless them.

We visited with Burt and family and George and his good wife. They have each of them a very nice little family of children and we feel to bless them in their families, in their homes and also in connection with their counselor, Brother Shurtleff, in their labors and in their bishopric labors in the ward capacity. We pray that they might be very humble and

faithful, that they might discharge their labors and duties honorably and acceptably to God and the good and holy priesthood. We left them feeling well and happy.

September 7th. We drove to Taylor, a ward seven miles from Eagle Rock. Saw several of the brethren, stopped with Brother and Sister George Wadsworth and Ann Parker, his wife. They seemed very much pleased. They had been baptized and want to be Saints. I labored faithfully with them to instruct, to encourage, and to strengthen them. We told them to pray. He told me he had never prayed, that his father and his mother had never taught him to pray. He told his wife if she would do the praying that he would do everything else. But, she told him, as she was willing to do her part to help him but she could not do it all. I told him he must pray and I got him to pray and I did pray for them and left them in the hands of the Lord and commended them to his grace asking God to bless and to strengthen them.

We saw old Bishop Wadsworth and his family. We also blessed him and his wife. We had good luck, from his place we drove through Ogden City in four and a half days. Stopped with Brother Henderson in Oneida. They treated me so very well.

October 4th. Arrived home safely and found all well. Felt very thankful to Almighty God my Heavenly Father for his goodness unto me and for his protection and for the abundance

of the Holy Spirit that he had shed forth upon me in all of my journey.

October 6th. We attended one of the richest conferences that we have ever had in the mountains. The Lord our God is with this people, for surely he is greatly blessing them.

[Editor's note: Here, again, J.L.R. expresses his gratitude for the great blessings which have been poured down upon the people in these valleys.]

October 12. I wrote and sent one letter to my wife and children Aunt Mary and our good children in the Snake River country. I feel so very thankful to the Lord, I find myself at home and for the good health we are enjoying, that my family and friends are striving to be Saints and for the great blessings that our God is bestowing upon the people of the Saints of the Most High.

October 16, the Sabbath, We attend a very excellent conference in the Ogden Tabernacle, a very full house. A very profound attention was paid to the rich and very interesting remarks made by several of the Twelve and President Seymore B. Young, Their instructions were so very consoling and heavenly.

October 21st. I brought my son Eben from Farmington to Hooper. This day the 400th anniversary of the discovery of the land and continent of America, or more proper very likely it should have been called Columbus Land because it was

discovered by Christopher Columbus 400 years ago today. This is a very choice land above all other lands. The spirit of God did rest upon Columbus and he was divinely inspired to search out this very choice land. Yea, the land of Joseph that was sold into Egypt, the land where our first parents Adam and Eve dwelt, the land where the rich and beautiful garden of Eden was planted.

[Editor's note: Here, for two and a half pages in his journal J.L.R. outlines the blessings that have been poured down upon the land of America.)

October 22nd. A very busy day getting my horses shod and repairing my carriage. I contemplate making a trip north to the Snake River country which is a distance of from 200 to 300 miles. This trip to be on business in part and also to visit and bless several of my friends but, mostly to fetch our sister Elizabeth Rice and her daughter May as they were very anxious to come to Utah and as they had not money to come on the cars. I proposed to go and fetch them, feeling very much disposed to try to do all the good that I can, feeling assured that the Lord will be with me and that he will make my way prosperous for I do go in his holy name and his spirit is always with me and I feel to glorify and praise his holy name.

October 23rd. I am visiting and writing some today and feel very happy in the Lord. I feel it is my duty to go and I start in his holy name, praying for his protection,

October 24th. I drive to my son William Robinson's and find him a cripple, on crutches. I anointed him and blessed him in the name of the Lord. He soon got well and they were greatly blessed, they said, that I came to help them.

Drove to Wellsville in Cache Valley. Stopped with Brother and Sister Isaac Green and they were so very pleased that I came. They seemed so very kind and good to me and we had a very excellent visit and talk of old times.

He said his wife had never received her patriarchal blessing and that she had been waiting and was very anxious to receive one from under my hands. In the morning, I did give unto her a good patriarchal blessing and she was so happy, so much pleased. She has a very amiable, nice daughter of about 20 years. She too, with a daughter-in-law also were very anxious for a blessing. I told them I would have to come again to give them one and that I would like to introduce a very good Mormon son of mine, for I felt very anxious that he should get him a good wife. The parents seemed very willing and I blessed them all in the name of the Lord and left them. Both Brother and Sister Green wished me well and invited me to stop and make it my home with them whenever I came along. I told them that I would call and see them but that I have other children and that they would be very jealous if I did so.

October 25th. I drove to Brother Everett Norton's. They were greatly pleased and they said I must never pass them.

I had good roads and good luck and put up with Brother and Sister Blocksom in a settlement called Nine Miles in Marsh Valley. They fed my horses and wanted to feed me. They treated me so good, I blessed them and preached good to them.

Called at Oneida and took breakfast with Sister Henderson. They wished me to be sure and stop with them when I come back.

October 27th. Drove to Pocatello, a very nice city and railroad town in the Snake River valley. I put up with Brother and Sister Margraves. They were so very pleased and I must be sure to call them when I return from the north.

October 28. I drove about 40 miles and was very royally entertained by Brother and Sister Hubert, a cheerful granddaughter to Brother Austin's family of the Centerville Ward. A very nice, good sister. She had a clever, good hardworking man but he has not as yet established a family altar in his house. But I taught him the importance of the same. I talked good to them and preached to them a good gospel sermon. We got him to pray in his family and I prayed for them and left my blessing with them.

October 29th, Saturday. I drove about 20 miles and arrived home safely at our place in Willow Creek. I found Aunt



Mary and the children all well and very much pleased to see me again and I felt so very thankful to my God for his signal blessings unto me not only for the extreme good weather, good roads and seeing them, this branch of my family and to find them all well and cheerful and happy.

October 30th. Am writing some and visiting some with my family and children. My stepson, the bishop, and his counselor George Simmons and their families and Elizabeth Rice. She herself and daughter Mary were there waiting for me and we did thank God for the fact of their good health. We had a good visit and are grateful for this also, for it being so late in the season and we wish to get back to Utah before the stormy and very cold weather set in.

October 31. The last day of October, We parted with our friends at Willow Creek, took Aunt Lib and her little daughter, called and took dinner with Sister Margaret Rice. She lives at Eagle Rock. She is keeping house for one of her sons and taking care of his motherless children. She seemed very much pleased to see me and wait on us and wished we would stay with them for a day or two.

We drove to the home of Jake Kucherson's. His wife is a daughter of the late Captain Lotsmith, one of the heroes of the nineteenth century. Her man was not at home. She lives in a good, large, strong new house. She said that her man had built that house. I told her she should be blessed and

for her to tell her man that I said that he should be saved. I had never seen her man but from the appearance of and the strength of that house and its improvements, I judged him to be good. We blessed them and drove to the city of the railroad, Pocatello. I stopped with Brother and Sister Hargraves and in the evening I gave to Sister Hargrave a very rich patriarchal blessing. She seemed to be very thankful, her health was quite poor. We hope she will get well. (The above at Pocatello was on November 1st.)

November 2nd. Aunt Lib stopped with William Rice, Margaret's son and we stopped with our friends, Brother and Sister Henderson, at Oneida, Marsh Valley, this being the name of this stake of Zion. They received us with great kindness. We had a very pleasant and agreeable visit and meeting in the evening.

November 3rd. Brother Henderson says, Brother Robinson, you will have to give my wife Mary a patriarchal blessing. She will not let you go away without it. Certainly, if any woman in the world said she must have one he says that he had to go to Pocatello, that his clerk will write her blessing. She did receive such good blessing for she was worthy. God bless her and her house forever.

Presently, her husband came in. I said, I thought you were gone to the city. He said, I was too late for the train. She said I told him he had better stop today and go tomorrow. He took

the chair and said, I want a blessing, will you give me one. And he did receive a good blessing from the Lord through his humble servant and they were such a happy couple for they did feel blessed and they truly were blessed. She gave me a handkerchief and one dollar in money and said they would pay me more another time. I told her that I was in debt to them. They thanked me a thousand times and I thanked them more. He gave me a sack of oats and wanted to give me more. We left them with a blessing and drove 20 miles, stopped with my stepson Eli Simmons and his good family and they were very kind to us and we left our blessing upon them and their house and upon their farm and upon their children.

November 4. Made a long drive through Malad Valley. Good roads and the blessings of God were upon us. We met Brother Joseph Hadfield of Farmington with his eldest daughter. He has built himself a good house and is making a farm in Malad Valley.

November 5th. We made a long drive and came to the city of Ogden. We stopped with Willie and family and found them well and pleased to see us.

November 6th. Sunday morning we drove home and found all well. We felt very thankful to God for he had greatly blessed us upon this little journey of about 500 miles. We had been gone two weeks.

November 7. Ebenezer helped me load some apples and I made a trip to Coalville, Summit County, Stopped with my daughters Janie and Emasophia with their families in Richville, Morgan County. Visited with and blessed them. Her good man was at home from his mission.

I saw Jeddy and George building a mill in Morgan. Stopped with Brother and Sister Richins and had a good visit with them. Sold out, got a load of coal and drove safely home Saturday evening, the 12th.

November 13th. Back in Hooper. Attended meeting and preaching good to the Saints. Visited Brother Thomas Johnson. We blessed him and his family.

November 20th. Sunday. Ebenezer and the family attend meeting. I writing a good letter to my children Solomon and Mary Jane in Arizona. The weather is very cool. Oscar paid our taxes in Ogden.

November 23rd. Me, Aunt Rinda & Ebenezer go to Farmington to attend a wedding party. We find some sick, Aurelia, George Clawson's wife and Laura's youngest daughter. I anointed and blessed them. They got immediately better. Visited some with Brother dark's family and others.

November 24th. Thanksgiving Day. I visited my son Joseph Elijah and family and took Thanksgiving dinner with them. They said, our son William wants you to give him a patriarchal blessing and in the evening we repaired to the house of

Timothy and Lucy Clark by invitation to celebrate the wedding of our worthy son and brother, or rather our grandson, Oliver Wilcox and their daughter Eva Clark, A royal feast of fat things were prepared in great abundance and a very large and extremely civil company was assembled. There was a royal supper, a mammoth wedding cake and an abundance of rich food. After supper was over the boys got up a very good program. I was called upon to make a few remarks which I did with pleasure. The bridegroom wished me to give his wife, the bride, a patriarchal blessing as she was very anxious for one. As he had obtained his sometime since from under my hands and it was decided they should meet me at the house of Joseph E. Robinson, the next day at 12 o'clock noon.

November 25th. At my son's house, Joseph and Dora's, this day I gave to my grandson Eddie West and unto William Robinson, Joseph E. and Dora's son and also to Eva [or Eda], the young bride, patriarchal blessings. And the Lord did give unto them or promise unto them good and great blessings through his humble servant.

November 26th and 27th

[Editor's note: J.L.R.'s journal on these dates contains his testimony of the prophet Joseph Smith, "the only hand that has the legitimate right to lead and to control the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints and the kingdom of God here on this earth." He then again gives his testimony of him and concludes with the statement that "Ebenezer

and I were acquainted with the Prophet Joseph Smith and did know him to be a true and a holy prophet of the most high God and that he was called and chosen to lay the foundation of a great work. He was chosen of God to head the dispensation of the fullness of times and also to know that he, Joseph Smith, was responsible for what he taught, that he had good backing, and that Almighty God will bear him out in the things he taught to the Saints." J.L.R. again states that he knows that he, Joseph Smith, taught publicly that the law in Zion should be such that if a man received the gospel in Turkey, he could bring his five wives to Zion and enjoy them here the same as he could in his own country and that was synonymous to saying that polygamy will be practiced in this Church of Jesus Christ and I do know that the Prophet did say not very long before he was martyred he said it in public while he was speaking on the stand that he held the kingdom and the authority thereof and that this kingdom was put on the shoulders of the Twelve and that they were to bear it, for he was going to rest." J.L.R. then proceeds to give his justification of the original doctrine of the plurality of wives even though conditions made it necessary for this law to be lifted from the Church. His writing on this subject occupies pages 176, 177, 178, 179, 180 and part of 181.]

[Editor's note: Joseph Lee Robinson concludes his testimony with these words.]

Very straight is the gate and very narrow is the way that leads to life eternal and Jesus said, that few there be that find it. Now if I was to express my mind upon this subject it would

be that a great portion of the people who were baptized into this Church and do become members of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, in my candid opinion, they had better let the courting of the second wife alone unless they are commanded of the Lord to enter into that holy order, for it certainly is an holy order.

You may ask, why then is or was it offered to all? I could give it as my opinion that it should be offered to all so that it could not be called a partial or personal doctrine. Brethren Brigham and Heber C. did say that they had sealed more to damnation than to salvation. Now I wish to say that polygamy in the world in any shape is another thing and altogether, why so? Because men cannot be sealed or are not sealed by the authority and according to the law of God and by the holy spirit of promise. Any other kind of marrying will only last for time,

But the laws of the land are framed on the purpose to kill and stop this doctrine, or tenant of our holy religion. So that we will be obliged to obey the law. We must not preach nor practice this while the law is in existence. For this is the word and will of the Lord according to Saint Wilford, our president and his counselors.

December 1st. It is snowing. I attended fast and teacher's meeting. Took meat and butter donations.

Saturday evening, the 3rd, our Ebenezer talked in our meeting house, a very good house. His subject charity. My son Ebenezer seems to be very zealous and he is or feels quite certain that he is on the right track and young Joseph is the right man to lead this church. But, I told him that I do know that the same Holy Ghost that was given to the Saints at the start and also when I first embraced the gospel is the same that I and all the faithful of the Latter-day Saints do enjoy today.

Also, that same Holy Spirit has certainly remained with this Church ever since the death of the Prophet Joseph Smith, and that the authority and power of the holy priesthood is certainly in this Church and with this people here in these mountains. Also, that God is with them, I do know and furthermore I do know and do testify that God has not rejected this people with their great faith and with their dead. Consequently I could not receive any man into fellowship, much more follow after him, low here and low there, no, never, no man unless he does come into this Church by the door of baptism and become a member in good standing and in full fellowship. Then he must be anointed by inspiration. Then he must be voted in by this entire Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints before I could, or would, go after or acknowledge him my leader. So, there is no other rule by which I could ever become a member of young Joseph's church.



December 4th, I received a good letter from Aunt Mary. All is well. Lee is married to that good girl to whom I gave a blessing.

December 8th, 1892. This morning, at 4 o'clock, our daughter Loella Rice, gave birth to a nice, fine son. This is their fifth child. He is a very nice, promising child. As my son-in-law Oscar Rice was living with his family in my house in Hooper he had taken my farm and I had blessed her some weeks or two before this. We had promised her in the name of the Lord that she should go the full time with that child and that she should have strength to be delivered of a good child, the spirit said a son but that child should be blessed and so it was.

She was blessed of the Lord. She was immensely blessed with an easy time and good luck and was well attended to.

The room was kept warm and she was getting along splendidly. She had an abundance of nurse for the child. It was growing nicely.

She, Loella, had a good appetite. She ate her breakfast yesterday morning and after she took a good nap and after her breakfast this morning as usual turned herself to us and we supposed she had gone to sleep. She appeared cheerful, made no complaint. Her husband came to see her to tell her something, and she was dead. This was about 10 o'clock in the morning of December 16th. He screamed and cried, My wife is dead. My God, my God. My dearest, my darling wife

has gone and left me. What shall I do? And her mother, my wife Laurinda came to my door and I was writing in my room adjoining to where she was sleeping (my daughter).

My wife was screaming and wringing her hands saying Wella is dead. Oh father Loella is dead and the whole house was crying, almost distracted.

I went immediately, saw her, she was lying quiet with her eyes closed tightly as a person's eyes could be when she is fast asleep. She was looking more pleasant and sweet comfortable and fast asleep. Her hands were getting cold and there were no symptoms of life at all with her.

Surely, she had gone to sleep, to rest. She did look so very pleasant and sweet. Surely she had never before this looked so sweet and good to me, so sweet and lovely, .And verily, I do term it one of the most remarkable cases or circumstances that ever happened. This was on Friday morning, just eight days and six hours after her child was born.

Bishop Childs came down and did as well as a bishop could do. He and I took that little motherless child into our arms and gave unto him a name and also a good father's blessing. The neighbors, as good brothers and sisters came in and greatly sympathized with the afflicted ones and the Lord will surely greatly reward them.

They did dress her so beautifully and put her in a very nice coffin so that she was buried very decently. But while she

was lying in her coffin, in my house I came to her secretly and placed my hand upon her forehead and in the name of the Lord I did bless that sleeping tabernacle of flesh, saying rest thou in peace and in quiet until the morning of the holy resurrection when the spirit which shall have performed a very noble work with her sisters and good friends in the spirit world shall reunite with \_\_\_\_\_ and shall become immortal. Thou shalt die no more, then thou shalt embrace thy husband and thy friends with great joy and thou shalt wear a bright crown and live forever. These were the blessings that I placed upon the head of this very pleasant sleeping child and we have writing so much of it and it may be recorded, further credit for our satisfaction,

December 18th. Her funeral was solemnized in our ward meeting house at 2 o'clock Sunday afternoon. It occupied the entire meeting, the Sunday services for that day. The house was filled to overflowing. The songs, the sermons were very impressive and solemn, the speakers were George Powers, Henry Mannings, J. S, (F.) Johnson and they did all talk so very well and consoling.

There was a very large crowd of well-dressed, good looking, very solemn, very respectful people. They did all manifest their great respect to our departed dead.

I never felt this entire people and ward before like I did this day. There was a very long train of carriages that went

to the burial and when they were all gone from the grave but the bishop, William ChiIds, and Oley Olson and Nephi Hardy, his two counselors, the others had all started but these three waited for a blessing. As I drove past them the spirit of God rested down upon me to bless them. I said, Bishop and counselors, the blessings of the Lord Almighty shall rest down upon you and upon your house forever and as I prayed, Brother Joseph Fowley, I did

[Editor's note: With this testimony, with this tragic experience and with this blessing to the bishop and his counselors, Joseph Lee Robinson ends his journal. He died about two weeks later, January 1st, 1893.

·1884-1892·

## Second Section

A second, shorter journal, written  
by Joseph Lee Robinson in his last years

Our great grandfather, Joseph Lee Robinson also wrote another shorter journal which was separated and on the bottom of his larger, more complete journal. This journal begins with April 18, 1884 and ends December 1892. We will study it and incorporate all items of importance in the proper places in the main journal. Repetitive material will not be dictated.)

*April 25th, 1884*

Saturday, 25th April 1884. Elder Johnson came to me and asked that we administer to his wife as she was very sick. We consecrated one bottle of oil. I went with him and anointed her and blessed her. She is much relieved. Lee came home from Promitory. He had been quite unwell. We were glad to see him. George came also and my son-in-law Oscar Rice [J.L.R. spells Oscar "Ausker,"] and his wife my twin daughter Wella came from Farmington to see us.

April 27th. Took one bottle of oil, consecrated it and gave it to Sister Anna Blake and Elder J. S, Johnson. Anointed her and several elders and with myself laid our hands upon her and blessed her in the name of the Lord, as she is sick.

May 4th. Attended a funeral, spoke to the people, opened the meeting with prayer and spoke to the Saints, had a very good liberty of speech, a very fine day.

May 8th. Drove to Farmington, saw the children, anointed and blessed my daughter, Anna Maria as she was sick. Drove home.

May 11. Sunday, a funeral, Sister Moore was buried. Elders Johnson, Cook and Flanders spoke well at the funeral. Administered to Brother Rube Belnap's little son.

May 14th. Paid Joseph seven dollars. Traded some with him. Blessed my daughter Anna Maria Wilcox as she was sick with rheumatism and brought up Aunt Laurinda to Hooper.

May 15th. I start for Logan with my team and buggy to attend the dedication of the temple, as it is built and finished. Took my wife Laurinda and Sister Lary Johnson. We drove to Brigham, stayed with Brother Jensen's good family.

May 16. We drove around to Bear River and put up with Brother Israel Whiting. They treated us well. He lives in Wells-ville 10 miles from Logan. We had a good visit with them.

May 17. Drove to Logan, the temple was dedicated this day and attended meeting in the afternoon in the tabernacle, a rich meeting. We stayed at Sister Hannah's over night.

May 18. We received tickets and went through the house of the Lord, a heavenly sight. We found Brother Benjamin Williams and family. Stayed with them and had a good visit.

Monday evening we drove to Wellsville and stayed with Brother Whiting again, he made us welcome.

Certainly had a heavenly time. Thousands of Saints met at Logan to witness the dedication of the temple of God dedicated. It was open three days and was filled to overflowing. The people who attended were admitted by tickets. The dedicatory prayer was read each day and there was preaching and singing each day. It is a beautiful house, the second temple finished in these mountains.

May 19. We found Brother Benjamin Williams, took Sister Annette Cummings with us. We had a sweet visit with them. He took us in his carriage, saw some of his children and much of that large and beautiful city. They have a large and splendid tabernacle and a beautiful temple. They are far richer now than they were when they commenced to build them.

May 20, We drove over the mountains through Copenhagen out at Brigham City, We found the sailing rough and tumble but the Lord blessed us.

Dark found us at Byron Bybee's house in Uintah near the mouth of Weber Canyon. We found our daughter Jane and family well, had a good visit with them. We had driven 48 miles that day.

May 21st. Drove to Ogden and did some trading and drove to Hooper and found all well.

May 24th. Drove to Farmington, took Aunt Rinda home, she was sick that night and the doctor helped her to get some better. Went and visited my daughter Anna Maria. She has been very sick but is better now. Took dinner with her and took my wife down to Millie's, our twins birthday. Took supper with them. Drove home.

June 9. George Clawson, my son-in-law came up with me and he helped me this week. He did us a good job upon our house and other things, putting up a good porch and bedroom and milkroom. Mary stopped with the children and I took George to Farmington.

July 3rd. Fast day. Attend meeting, pay fast donations. This meeting very interesting. President Shurtleff in attendance said we should leave off working on Sunday and keep the Word of Wisdom strictly.

July 6. Took Amos to Salt Lake City. Aunt Rinda went with us on a visit. Got Wella to Hooper.

July 23rd. Took my daughter Laurinda Parker to Farmington. All is well, the crops came in.



July 24th. Attend meeting in the grove. The stake bet for a celebration. However there were funeral services for Elders Barry and Gibbs who were martyred by the hands of a mob in the state of Tennessee one Sunday morning as they had met at a private house of Brother Condor's to hold a religious meeting. They were shot down like wild beasts in the land of religious liberty, liberty for which many of our noble fathers bled and died.

October 6th. Attend conference in big tabernacle with an overflowing house. Good attention was paid to rich preaching and teaching by the First Presidency and Twelve. The reins are being drawn a little tighter. The Lord requires his people should come up to a higher standard of purity. There is a marked improvement in the people of the Saints. Many are paying their tithing and keeping the Word of Wisdom better and performing their duties better and the devil is howling longer and louder to wicked men.

October 15. Aunt Laurinda and I started for Logan with recommends to go to the temple to do some work for our dead. Stayed the first night with the family of George Marsh in Willard. He was absence but had a good visit with his family. We joined them in family prayer. The prayer was held in a circle the same as we do in our family prayers.

November 17. Monday, we went into the temple and registered for those for whom we wished to be baptized. Then we

drove to Brother Benjamin Williams where we stopped with them that night.

November 18. Went to the temple and were baptized, I for the renewal of my covenants and for the restoration of my hearing and for several of Rinda's male friends, also she for the renewal of her covenants and for several of her friends. Brother Williams said we must stay with him while we were in Logan.

November 19. Went to the temple and received endowments for my father Nathan Robinson and she for her sister (Jemsha). I received a great blessing after being baptized for my hearing.

November 20. We again went to the temple and received endowments I for my grandfather Samuel Brown and she for her sister Orril. We were exceedingly happy while in that house.

November 21. We were in time arriving at the temple by half past eight in the morning, I received endowments for my great grandfather Joseph Lee and she for her friend Rebecca Smith who was dead. She also had her two sisters sealed to their former husbands. We acted as proxy. The spirit of peace dwelt there with us.

November 22nd. This temple is a beautiful house in a beautiful city. We drove to Wellsville and stayed all night with Brother Israel Whiting and family. I gave his stepdaughter a

patriarchal blessing. It was a good one, she is a very good girl. Also laid my hands on their heads and blessed all the family. They felt themselves greatly blessed. And I myself, if I dared to say it, while in Wellsville was blessed almost beyond measure, for the voice of the spirit said to me, You are clean before the Lord, I have no doubt.

November 23rd, Sunday. We drove to Hooper, had a very interesting time. The Lord was with us. Have considerable writing in a life book from

September 1888 to February 1885, which I have not in this book.

[Editor's note: J.L.R. indicated on a previous page that he had written considerably more in another book than he was writing in this book. As a matter of fact, this account is sketchy and skips many days.]

### *February 18, 1885*

February 18, 1885. My birthday, 74 years old today and a very excellent good time. Was very greatly and happily surprised in that we had plenty of good beer (root, undoubtedly) and a splendid supper with a large and lively company and last but not least the Hooper brass band which discoursed for us very excellently. Yes, they appeared and behaved and performed (in music) magnificently. We were entertained with songs,

speeches and a super abundance of choice food and plenty of drink of our own make, no imported wines or liquors. We had truly a most enjoyable time. All seemed to feel so good and happy to celebrate my birthday. It was planned and got up through the labors and dictations of my wife Mary, she is good, God bless her.

February 19. Elder F. S. Johnson [it is difficult to read these initials] anointed my daughter Emma Sophia for her health and we laid our hands upon her head and I blessed her in the name of the Lord.

February 20th. Took my wife Mary and daughters Laurinda Parker and Emma Sophia and Sister Baker up to Willie's and made them a visit and blessed his little son. He was eight days old. His name is William Jesse.

22nd. Wrote two letters to my children in Arizona.

April 1st. We had a fine rain and Joseph came from the north on a visit fixing to go for conference.

April 2nd, Start for conference at Logan this time. I took Aunt Rinda and Charles Parker and his wife our daughter Laurinda and babe with us in my buggy and we drove to Willard the first night. We stayed with Brother and Sister Evans, Charlie's friends.

April 3. We passed over a hilly and rough road with some snow and mud, into the south end of Cache Valley five miles south of Paradise. Passed through Paradise and Hyrum, two

very nice cities, into Wellsville and found good dry roads in Cache Valley. We stopped with Brother and Sister Parkinson.

April 4th. Saturday, a fine day. I drove to Logan. Was in time for conference. On the stand was five of the Twelve Apostles namely Franklin D. Richards, presiding and John Henry Smith, F. M. Lyman, Grant and Taylor and a number of the presidents of stakes with many bishops and a house full of Saints, but no First Presidency. This was the first general or annual conference ever held without some of the Presidency attending. They are sought after by our enemies and we deem it wisdom for them to hide themselves as they are wise and good men and we do not want them to be abused or slain by the wicked mob, as they are persecuting and afflicting the Saints, some of them, and we do not know whether they will ever cease their raid against the Latter-day Saints, probably not until the Lord shall stop them. We had a very excellent meeting.

Sunday 5th, Apostles F. D. Richards, John Henry Smith, Marion Lyman were the speakers. Their preachings and teachings were sound and logical and very interesting.

April 6th. The conference closed, but these apostles spoke today instead of yesterday and we had a very excellent conference. The house packed and many that could not get in.

We stopped with Brother and Sister Benjamin Williams and family, were treated very kindly and we feel to bless them very

much. Drove to Wellsville, stopped with and took breakfast with Brother Whiting and family.

April 7. Drove around the mountain to Bear River down to Willard. Stopped with Brother and Sister Edwards and were well entertained.

April 8. We drove home in good weather.

April 12. Attended meetings in Farmington. My grandson Ebenezer Wilcox, who is going on a mission to the states, spoke with some others, I spoke and went to my daughter Anna Maria's in the Monday evening.

April 14th. Ebenezer Wilcox starts on his mission to the state of Indiana.

April 26th. Brothers Bidolph and Farandland and families came to visit us.

May 3rd. Attended Sunday conference in Salt Lake, a very excellent meeting. The mob courts and U.S. marshalls are raiding heavy on polygamist Mormons.

May 17. The U.S. officers and courts are making a heavy raid on our polygamist Mormons, fining and imprisoning several for their crime of marrying wives and owning their children and educating them. Our councilmen have visited President Cleveland and delivered their statements of grievances and protest. The President says he will appoint officers who will execute the laws impartially. We hope he will.

June 6. A pleasant day. Took a cow to Farmington for Rilla Clawson.

June 13. Brought Aunt Rinda up, Joseph and Henry with their wives came to see us. We took dinner at Charlie's, had plenty of strawberries and a good visit.

June 26. Took Anice and her crippled son David to Salt Lake City to get him doctored.. Consulted with Doctor Anderson. He prescribed, she got some medicines and we left her and children with Brother Joseph Kingsberry and family.

June 28, Sabbath. Brought Janie and children and we attended meeting in Hooper. Elders Henry Manning, William Garner and Joseph Belnap spoke and gave good talks.

July 24. Pioneers Day. It was celebrated in the Farmington Grove, a good turn out, a very enjoyable time faired sumptuously. General Grant is dead and the flags are draped in mourning. Visited some with my children.

[Editor's note: The entries for the months of August and September are primarily about the weather, farming, and incidental activities.]

October 2nd. Go to Farmington, gather some peaches and brought a load of apples. I got Joseph's carriage from him to go to conference.

October 6. We start, Mary and our daughter Lucy and I, to attend conference at Logan. We had Joseph's good carriage with a comfortable fit out (outfit) expecting to take a trip north to the Snake River country and to visit some of our children

and friends. Also to see the temple at Logan and some of the settlements of the Saints.

We drove to Denmark, Box Elder Valley, a small well watered with a very nice large town built exclusively by the Danish Saints. Put up with Brother and Sister Jacobson. They treated us so kindly. The name of their place is Mantua.

October 7. Arrived in Logan and took dinner with Brother Ricks. Attended conference. They have a very large and commodious tabernacle and it was packed to its utmost capacity, a very excellent conference. The preaching and teaching was very interesting and instructive. Seven of the Twelve were in attendance. We put up and stayed with Brother and Sister Benjamin Williams. They treated us very kindly. We visited Brother Elison. He wished us to come in the morning and bless his wife which I did the next morning and felt her blessed.

October 8. We all attended conference, a splendid meeting and after meeting we visited Brother and Sister Williams', son-in-law. He was very sick and I anointed and blessed him in the name of the Lord and he received a blessing.

We drove around the temple, a beautiful and striking building in a large and beautiful city. We visited and blessed Sister Williams, got some cheese from them and drove across Bear River about 18 miles and put up with Sister Huse and family.



October 9. We passed through Trenton. Here we found Brother James Harrison, then drove on passing through Whiston and Clifton and Oxford and some other places. Put up with Sister Thornton, a good woman and a good house. She was very kind to us.

October 10, We drove into Marsh Valley. Found Ely this morning. Stopped with them over Sunday. He and his wife are doing very well. We enjoyed ourselves very much with them. They treated us well and we had a good time together.

October 16. George took me over to Amos' farm. There is a fine stream of water running through it. On Sunday, 17, Amos took me some eight or ten miles to a settlement called Louisville. We saw Brother Thomas Sairs [Sears?] and wife and sons. They are making a good start, are not far from the river, but a few miles from Rexburg.

October 23rd. Left Marsh Valley and Ely's place, drove over the Divide, through Malad City, stopped with Brother Joseph Harris then crossed over the Bear River and put up with Brother Chester Loveland. He was an old acquaintance.

October 25. Drove home and stopped to do some trading in Ogden. Arrived home in the evening, found all well with a considerable amount of work to do.

November 2nd. Took Aunt Rinda and Rosa to Salt Lake. Stopped with Aunt Ann Cummings, sold some wool and some white beans, then came to Farmington.

November 16. Attended a ward meeting, a good turnout seeking to effect ecclesiastical organization in the ward in order to save our church's property and take care of the same. Drove to Byron Bybee's and stayed overnight with them. He is getting along extra well.

November 18. Took Rilla and her children to Farmington. Her husband has gone north working. Took Aunt Rinda and Ester to Anna Maria Wilcox's and had a good visit with her.

November 20, Sunday. Drove over to Briga Stowel's place to see my daughter Alice and David. Her little son has one of his legs amputated. I anointed and blessed him.

December 22nd. It is raining. I drove to Croydon and Henifer. Sold some apples and molasses and dried fruit. Arrived at Edward Richins at dark. Had a good visit and stay with them.

Drove to Enterprise, Put up with Jesse Haven, Got myself a pair of blankets, boots and comforter for a Christmas present.

December 24. Drove home. Found all well, had a good time, received money, paid school taxes and five dollars to Joseph on store debt. Took dinner at Janie's table.

December 25, Christmas. A very good day. Felt thankful to my Father in Heaven for the privilege of enjoying the 74th Christmas in my probationary state. A happy Christmas it is indeed. I have the great privilege of enjoying the society

of Saints, I've received in the gospel peacefulness and of entering largely into the work of assisting to build the kingdom of God on the earth.

*January 1, 1886*

January 1. New Year's. A happy New Year's day. Had a good dinner and company at home. Spent the evening with some of our friends and had a pleasant supper.

The past year has been a very pacific one. The earth has yielded bounteously which blessing we heartily thank the great giver of all good. We have great peace and some severe persecutions. Our Gentile friends are very bitter because we believe in and are striving to obey his holy commandments. Our great and glorious Constitution says we shall not be proscribed in our religious exercises and worship, but our government says we shall not. Therefore, because we obey God, they put into execution their mob law and fine and imprison some of our brethren. They have murdered and robbed and imprisoned many of our brethren and may be many more of them as they always have done when the true worshipers of the true God was on the earth.

January 3rd. We had with us Brothers Farndland and our son William Robinson and families and Mary got us a royal good dinner. We had a good visit.

January 4. Took Aunt Rinda and our daughter Laurinda to Farmington, found our children well. On the 5th, visited with the children and in the evening attended a theatrical performance. My son Joseph Elijah gave me a ticket. Saw my son Oliver, he offered me one.

January 6. Came up to Hooper, very cold weather. Mary and Burt and his wife and I went to Brother Farndland's for a visit.

February 4. Attended fast meeting. Bore my testimony, a very good attendance. Several of the brethren spoke and we had a very good meeting. Took dinner with my daughter Laurinda Parker. Received some mail including paper and some letters, one from a grandson of my brother William, his name is Milton Robinson, Bradford, McKene County, Pennsylvania.

February 17. Drove to Croydon, travelled some then to Henifer. Sold some fruit and meat. Then to Richins. Put up with them. Found them mostly well, mostly good for the time of the year.

February 18. My birthday, 75 years old today. Three-quarters of a century, I have been a sojourner on this Lord's earth. It is through his blessings we live and in him we live, move and have our being. Many have been things of great rejoicing, and many are the heavenly visions and rich manifestations of his love and power and knowledge and intelligence hath the

Lord God manifested unto me, unworthy me, for which I feel very grateful unto him.

[Editor's note: J.L.R.'s pages, his numbers 15, 16, for February, March, 1886 are so badly smeared as to be unreadable.]

April 23rd. Took Aunt Rinda to Salt Lake City, sold some wool and bought Mary a churn. Went to the Historian's Office, saw Brother Franklin. He said I could search the records for our dead, I engaged Laron Cummings to search for us, Laurinda and me. We studied the New England state records as they have them there. We visited with Sister Annette and Jane and drove to Farmington, attended meeting and drove to James Wilcox's, visited with them. Got my records prepared and came to Hooper. Found all well. Had a good time copying my records this week and working about home. I received one letter from my daughter Mary Jane West.

April 29. Drove to Ogden and went to the mill. Did some trading, preparing to go forth for a while. Received a letter from our children Fredrick and Emma Sophia. They have a fine daughter they are very proud of. Her name is Lydia Ann.

May 3rd. Sent a letter and my family records to Milton Robinson in Pennsylvania. Also one long letter to my daughter Mary Jane West and family. Went to Ogden, heard from Anise and children. She found her man waiting for her. They had a good trip and David is better. They are gone to Old Mexico.

May 9. Went to Baker's house in the morning and gave seven patriarchal blessings. The parties blessed were William Baker and wife, my son William Robinson and wife, Chancey Garner and wife, Brother Bevans our school teacher. He wrote all the blessings. At four o'clock, went to Charles Parker's and gave five patriarchal blessings to Uncle Charles Blake and wife, Charles Parker and wife, and Sister Bevans, the school teacher's wife, he being the scribe. This, on the Sabbath day, before leaving Hooper.

May 10 and 11. Preparing and covering our wagons for our trip north. On May 12, we start with three wagons, Burt goes with us with his team and little David Fowls drives one team and our Harriett drives one and Lee went with Samuel to start the stock. Brother Thomas Johnson came and brought some chickens to send to his daughter at Eagle Rock, He helped me prepare my buggy and also Willie and Chancey came with their wives to see us start. They helped also to put covers over the buggy. After dinner, I gave Brother Thomas a patriarchal blessing.

We, Mary and Lucy, start our Snake River trip, two or three hundred miles north.

We drove to the hot springs and camped. Lee returned. We passed through Brigham City, but Brother Lorenzo Snow, one of the Twelve Apostles, is in the Pen which circumstance we regret very much.

May 14. We camped in Dueyville last night. We repaired our wheel this morning, all is well. On the 15th, we camped in Malad Valley, drove through Malad City and over the divide into Marsh. Put up with Ely, found them well and looking for us to come.

May 16th, Sunday. I took Ely's wife to Oxford, had some talk with Brother Smith and took dinner with them and brought Sarah's sister with us to stop with her while Ely was gone, as he went with us.

May 17 and 18. Herding stock and preparing to move onto Snake River to Amos's and George's place.

May 19. We leave Marsh with some of George's and Ely's stock and a very rough road and a good time. And Ely took his team and three pigs and several of our load. Mary and Lucy drove the buggy and Harriett drove one wagon and I drove one and two boys drove the stock.

Saturday evening brought us into Eagle Rock. The folks put up with George and Amos, but the boys and stock and I with one team stopped with Brother and Sister \_\_\_\_\_?

May 24. We finished our journey on Sunday and we rested, for we felt tired. We thanked the Lord and was encouraged to find that the boys had a good crop in and had done well.

May 30th, 1886, on Willow Creek, eight miles northeast of Eagle Rock, Idaho. The boys, Ely and Burt started back home on the 29th. David with them, gave him [cents?].

Sunday at home, reading, writing and resting as we are laboring hard. Had put in several acres into lucern barley and potatoes and other things,

[EDITOR'S NOTE: J.L.R.'s page 18, his numbering, covers the rest of June and July and their activities primarily on the farm and in visiting friends and relatives.]

August 1st, Sunday. Attended meeting. Missionaries Parley P. Pratt's son preached to us. He looks very much like his father. He talked well to us together with a young bishop of the ward,

[Editor's note: In the August days that follow to the 18th, J.L.R. tells of farming and visiting some members of the family. On the 11th he took Aunt Rinda to Farmington and got some peaches from Brother Wilcox and some apples from Sister Bybee and Sister Sales. He wrote]

All my children were well at Farmington. Oliver had built a house for his second daughter Alice Richards and a greenery for his brother Joseph. August 13, packed some fruit and start for Willow Creek near Eagle Rock, Idaho. Drove to Mark Bigler's, he gave me hay for my horses. Drove all day to find a meeting but found none. Reached Marsh Valley on Monday. Arrived at Ely's at noon but found my peaches spoiled, sold some apples and honey. On Sunday, August 22nd, Mary, Amos and I attend meeting at Eagle Rock. I was called upon to preach to the people.



August 23rd. This evening, through the news, we received the sad news that Oliver, my eldest son, my dear son, died. He departed this life on the 18th and was buried on the 22nd, Sunday, at Farmington. There was a great gathering for he was a very much respected and very useful man in the Church. His family took his death very hard. We mourn very deeply for him. We ask our God to give unto us grace that we may feel reconcile to his death. The Lord giveth and the Lord taketh away and we feel to bless his holy name and try to be reconciled to his will and his rod.

August 26th. Went to James Michel's and brought his machine to cut my barley and some hay for the boys.

August 29th. We attend meeting east of us. Bishop Cordon met with us. He called on me to speak. There was a large ward and the families of the Saints are very much gathered.

[Editor's note: J.L.R., during the first days of September, 1886, spent his time helping on the farm and attended meetings.]

September 12, Sunday. Wrote a letter to my afflicted children in Farmington. At home, reading and writing and preparing to start for Utah.

September 16. Samuel and I start for Utah on business. Took with us to Ogden James Smith and James Michel. We arrived at Ely's place in Marsh Valley. Stopped with him over the Sabbath.

September 21st. Arrived in Ogden two days from Marsh. Stayed overnight with Brother Michel. He has a fine crop of apples.

September 22nd. Arrived in Hooper, found all well. The boys are busy making up molasses. I went immediately to work helping, repairing gates, hauling cane and lucern seed and cutting peaches.

September 24. Visited and anointed Brother Charles Blake. He is very sick. We feel to thank the Lord our God that he has of late removed several of our bitterest and very ungodly official enemies.

September 26, Sunday, Drove to Farmington, found all well but the marshalls are making a heavy raid on our polygamists. Have arrested Brother Watson, E. T. Clark and Peter Barkdoll and had writs for several others.

It is very remarkable, if not strange, the Lord has removed by death several of our brethren from their families, namely Thomas Grover, O. L. Robinson, Job Welling, Joseph France, Leonard G. Rice.

I visited several of my very exceedingly afflicted children of Oliver's family.

[Editor's note: The first days of October, J.L.R. spent time on the farm, paid some tithing in Ogden, saw several of his afflicted children and took Aunt Rinda to Hooper.]

October 4. The boys shod one horse and I drove up to Byron Bybee's. Took Rinda Parker and her mother and visited with our daughter Janie and family.

October 5. Drove to Jesse Havens, took dinner and had a good chat with them. Took supper with Brother and Sister Thackrey, sold them some molasses and drove over to Brother Richens.

October 6. We attended conference at Coalville. Four of the Twelve were in attendance namely F. S. Richards, presiding and John Henry Smith, Heber J. Grant, John Taylor and some of the presidents of the stakes and other brethren. It was the 56th Semi-Annual Conference of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. A very interesting conference, a good demonstration of the spirit.

We administered to Sister Richens. She is some better. Brother Richens gave me some early potatoes for seed.

October 9. We drove to Fredrick Clark's, my son-in-law, he is absent attending a Seventies meeting. Found our beloved daughter Emma Sofia and beautiful baby.

October 10, Sunday, raining hard, but drove to Janie's and stayed over night.

[Editor's note: these last few pages of J.L.R.'s journal, the second one, covering the ending months of 1886 are very finely written and crowded in lines that are crowded close together making the journal very difficult to read. They cover primarily mundane things such as

crop planting, writing, visiting, and the like. Except where names are mentioned or significant events occur, they will be abbreviated here. We refer to his pages numbered 20–24 and covering September, October, November and December, 1886.]

October 15. Went to Farmington, took Aunt Rinda and some salt and wheat to Joseph and to Fred Combs. Wrote and sent one letter to my nephew, Milton Robinson. On 16th, visited my daughters Ester and Anna Maria and came back to Hooper.

November 3rd. Fine weather. Lee and I start for Snake River with two good loads. Laurinda gave us some cakes and butter and we butchered a sheep. Had plenty and camped at Coal Springs. On 4th, crossed Bear River and drove to Willard. The Wellings treated us kindly. I drove over to Ely's. He and his wife are blessed and prospered by the Lord and have a fine, new, big son.

November 11. Drove to Eagle Rock, stopped at John Hill's. Patience gave us some dinner. He owes me \$1.50 for salt and apples. Left one cake of molasses and arrived home, felt thankful.

November 13. George, Mary and I start for conference, cross Snake River for the first time, a great river and beautiful water. Put up with Hyrum Simmons. They treat us very well.

November 14. Hyrum went with us to Rexburg, found a good meeting and a large city. It surprised me very much. Apostle John Henry Smith preached to us most of the day.

His subject was on the law of tithing, purity of life and the first principles.

December 9. Had a good chat with Elder Johnson and was very happy to see them home again. Had a very excellent breakfast and a very enjoyable time reading a portion of the Apocrypha of the New Testament. It was an uncommon treat for me. I enjoyed it very much, about the virgin Mary which was a child of promise, of her being taught and educated for the express purpose of bearing the Son of God, the Savior of the world. Also the birth of the Savior and many important cases of healing which the Bible never mentions and many other things equally as marvelous and interesting. Read until late hour in the morning.

December 10. Drove to my place, found the children well and things in as good condition as I expected.

December 11. Visited Charley and Ruby Parker this evening. Burt took some things and some tithing to Ogden. I paid Burton \$20 on a note and on account.

December 12, Sunday. Writing some and visiting the sick, my grandson David has got well. December 20th. Traveled with Dora and came to Willie's and blessed his second son. His name is Joseph, then drove to Hooper.

December 21st. Working on gates and fences, reading Juvenile Instructor and the Bible.

December 22nd. Burt and I are plowing and picking up potatoes. Visited Mother Blakes at the same time. Samuel is gone to Ogden to get him some clothes. It is snowing some this evening.

December 24th. Drove through the mud to Farmington, found all well and much blessed to see them, felt very happy.

December 25th, Christmas. My 75th anniversary of that auspicious day we celebrate as the birth of beloved Savior Jesus Christ and if I was certain he was born on that day I would celebrate it before any other day in the world for I do certainly love him more than any other one that ever lived in this world. Yea, better than all the rest put together, and the Prophet Joseph Smith the next. Because they exhibit so much nobility, charity and godlike majesty.

I love my wives with all my heart and my children dearly and my neighbors and myself

[Editor's note: A few lines illegible.]

chiefest among 10,000 and all together lovely.

We had a lovely dinner and a good time. Aunt Rinda surely knows how to do it and the girls got it up for us. We had for guests in company our children Janie, Josephine, and Rita and Wells with their husband and children. Also Jedda with his family, a good house full and plenty of dinner and a very pleasant time indeed. Yea, a time we shall long remember,

Christmas and New Year's and my visit with them and the blessings we received.

December 26. I attended Sunday School, a very good full school, well conducted under the able superintendence of Brother James Smith. I was called upon to make a few remarks, spoke a few minutes to the children. We feel very much interested in the childrens welfare. We took dinner with my daughter Anna Maria and Henry Wilcox.

Attended 2 o'clock meeting. Brother Thomas Steed was called to the stand. He spoke very good to the Saints, told a very interesting incident of two brothers who live in Scotland, the one a Mormon, the other a Methodist. The Methodist died and after a while he came into the room where his Mormon brother was and he says, James, it is you. I did not expect to see you again until I came to you. But, James says, I have obtained permission to come and bring a message to you. Now my dear brother, will you forgive me for my abuse to you while I was with you and when I was with you on the earth. Yes, said he the Mormon, with all my heart, said he, I forgive you. When we took you to the grave, said the visitor I thank you kindly, now, said he, you will go up into the mountains, there will be temples there and you will do a work for me that I may come out of prison. Yes, certainly, I will. How is it, James? Are you not happy? I thought when you died you were going right to heaven.

Oh, but it is not so. I am in prison and will have to remain there until someone does a work for me in a temple here upon the earth. The visitor said further that when the Prophet Joseph Smith died, he came and started Mormon meetings there and that they were rather poorly attended at first but that they were very well attended now. Said he, there are Methodist meetings and Presbyterians, and other denominations held there also. The visitor then left and said Brother Steed this morning. But he has since come here and done the work in the Logan temple for his brother and also for hundreds of others. While he was doing this, it was the happiest days of his life.

I note this for it is very interesting and a striking proof of the magnitude and importance of this latter day work in the human family. It shows very firmly that the priesthood is God's authority and that the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints is indeed the true Church. Therefore, the importance of temples and also the magnitude of the work of the latter day people.

Regardless of how good this Methodist brother was, a work has to be done for him in holy temples. Now, how very thankful we should be to our God that he has led us into the mountains of Ephraim even unto his strong holies where we can and will be thrashed and cleaned, where we have liberty and are not in bondage, neither indeed shall we be.



The Saints shall not be moved again but shall be added to and spread abroad and many of the peaceful and meek people of the earth shall say, "Let us go up to Zion," and some of them shall come to Zion, even to a people that shall be at peace with each other and shall be very happy.

It came to pass that I stopped with my family, children and grandchildren and friends three weeks visiting with and blessing them and at this time gave upward of twenty patriarchal blessings. I did considerable writing and preaching. Sent one letter to Mary Jane West to Arizona and one to my daughters Emma Sofia and family in Morgan and one letter to my family and sons at Willow Creek, Snake River County. I wrote a description of the transfiguration of our Savior and his translation and ascension into heaven, how he was met in mid-air by countless thousands, thousands of angels who surrounded him and escorted him up to heaven with more sublime music than earth ever heard before, singing, and chanting, lifting up their heads, ye everlasting gates and the king of glory shall enter in.

[Editor's note: Here, J.L.R. ends this, his second journal. The next part of this second journal begins April, 1887 and is duplicative of the material already covered, or to be covered in his main journal. Consequently, this duplicative section will not be dictated and reproduced but the original pages will all be preserved with the regular journal which will be placed, as indicated, in the Historical Department

The Journal of JOSEPH LEE ROBINSON

of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. All pages carefully protected in plastic covers.]

Oliver Preston Robinson

Dictated 1978–1980

Typed 1979–1980 by Mary Robinson Egan

Published for the Robinson Family, 1981



The published journal was scanned and posted on the Internet as a PDF file by David and Joni Nielsen, 2002



The scanned journal was designed and programmed as a PDF ebook by Kevin Merrell, 2003